







ABRIDGEMENT

As Jacob Sheafe Son

#### OF

# LECTURES

# RHETORIC

# BY HUGH BLAIR, D. D.

REVISED AND CORRECTED, by - Cliphalet Acarsons L.L.D. Rog 16- Rheel

CAMBRIDGE, PRINTED AT THE UNIVERSITY PRESS BY WILLIAM HILLIARD. MDCCCII.



# ADVERTISEMENT.

THE want of a fystem of Rhetoric upon a concife plan and at an eafy price will, it is prefumed, render this little Volume acceptable to the public. To collect knowledge, which is fcattered over a wide extent, into a fmall compass; if it has not the merit of originality, has at leaft the advantage of being ufeful. Many, who are terrified at the idea of travelling over a ponderous volume in fearch of information, will yet fet out on a fhort journey in purfuit of fcience with alacrity and profit. Thofe, for whom the following Effays are principally intended, will derive peculiar benefit from the brevity, with which they are conveyed. To youth, who are engaged in the rudiments of learning ; whofe time and attention must be occupied by a variety of fubjects ; every branch of fcience

# ADVERTISEMENT.

fhould be rendered as concife, as possible. Hence the attention is not fatigued, nor the memory overloaded.

That a knowledge of Rhetoric forms a very material part of the education of a polite (cholar muft be univerfally allowed. Any attempt therefore, however imperfect, to make fo ufeful an art more generally known, has claim to that praife, which is the reward of good intention. With this the Editor will be fufficiently fatisfied; fince being ferviceable to others is the moft a greeable method of becoming contented with ourfelves.

# CONTENTS.

'NTRODUCTION	PAGM
On Tafle	I
Criticifm-Genius-Pleafures of Tafle-Sublimity	
in Objects	6
Sublimity in Writing	ıб
Beauty, and other Pleafures of Tafle	26
Origin and Progress of Language	34
Rife and Progress of Language and of Writing	43
Structure of Language	50
Structure of Language. English Tongue	55
Style-Perfpicuity and Precifion	63
Structure of Sentences	68
The fame fubject	74
Siructure of Sentences. Harmony	82
Origin and Nature of Figurative Language	89
Metaphor	95
Hyperbole-Apostrophe	IOI
Perfonification and Apostrophe	103
Comparison, Antithefis, Interrogation, Exclamation,	
and other Figures of Speech	108
Antithefis	112
Interrogation and Exclamation	113
Vision and Climax	114
General Characters of Style-diffuse, concise, feeble,	
nervous, dry, plain, neat, elegant, flowery	116

A 2

CONTENTS.

Style-fimple, affected webement. Directions for	PAGE
forming a proper Style	123
Critical Examination of Mr. Addison's Style in	**3
No. 411 of the Spectator	131
Eloquence. Origin of Eloquence—Grecian Elo-	131
quence—Demosthenes	143
Roman Eloquence-Cicero. Modern Eloquence	149
Eloquence of Popular Affemblies	156
Eloquence of the Bar	160
Eloquence of the Pulpit	167
Conduct of a Discourse in all its Parts. Introduc-	
tion, Division, Narration, and Explication	172
The Argumentative Part of a Discourse, the Pa-	
thetic Part, and the Peroration	180
Pronunciation or Delivery	186
Means of improving in Eloquence	197
Comparative Merit of the Antients and Moderns .	205
Hiftorical Writing	208
Philosophieal Writing and Dialogue	213
Epiftolary Writing	215
Filitious Hiftory	216
Nature of Poetry. Its Origin and Progrefs-	
Versification	218
Englifb Verfification	230
Paftoral Poetry	222
Lyric Poetry	228
Didatic Poetry	230
Defcriptive Poetry	233

# CONTENTS.

	PAGR
The Poetry of the Hebrews	238
Epic Poetry	243
Homer's Iliad and Odyffey	248
The Æneid of Virgil	253
Lucan's Pharfalia	256
Taffo's Jerufalem	259
The Lufiad of Camoens	261
The Telemachus of Fenelon	263
The Henriade of Voltaire	265
Milton's Paradife Loft	267
Dramatic Poetry. Tragedy	273
Greek Tragedy	284
French Tragedy	286
Englifb Tragedy	287
Comedy	290
Antient Comedy	293
Spanifb Comedy	295
French Comedy	ibid.
Englifb Comedy	296

A PROPER acquaintance with the circle of Liberal Arts is requifite to the fludy of Rhetoric and Belles Lettres. To extend the knowledge of them muft be the first care of those, who wish either to write with reputation, or fo to express themselves in public, as to command attention. Among the antients it was an effential principle, that the orator ought to be converfant in every department of learning. Noart indeed can be contrived, which can ftamp merit on a composition, rich or fplendid in expression, but barren or erroneous in fentiment .+ Oratory, it is true, has often been difgraced by attempts to eftablish a false criterion of its value. Writers have endeavored to fupply want of matter by graces of composition ; and courted the temporary applause of the ignorant inftead of the lafting approbation of the difcerning. But fuch imposture must be fhort and transitory. The body and fubftance of any valuable composition must be formed of knowledge and fcience. Rhe-

toric completes the ftructure, and adds the polifh; but firm and folid bodies only are able to receive it.

+ Among the learned it has long been a contefted, and remains still an undecided queftion, whether Nature or Art contribute moft toward excellence in writing and difcourfe. Various may be the opinions with respect to the manner, in which Art can most effectually furnish aid for such a purpofe; and it were prefumption to affert, that rhetorical rules, how just foever, are fufficient to form an orator. Private application and fludy, fuppofing natural genius to be favorable, are certainly fuperior to any fystem of public instruction. But, though rules and inftructions cannot effect every thing, which is requifite; they may be of confiderable ufe. x If they cannot infpire genius ; they can give it direction and affiftance. If they cannot make barrennefs fruitful; they can correct redundancy. They prefent proper models for imitation ; they point out the principal beauties, which ought to be fludied, and the chief faults, which ought to be avoided; and confequently tend to enlighten Tafte, and to con-

duct Genius from unnatural deviations into its proper Channel. Though they are incapable of producing great excellencies; they may at leaft ferve to prevent confiderable miftakes.

In the education of youth no object has appeared more important to wife men in every age, than to excite in them an early relifh for the entertainments of Tafte. From thefe to the difcharge of the higher and more important duties of life the tranfition is natural and eafy. Of thofe minds, which have this elegant and liberal turn, the moft pleafing hopes may be entertained. On the contrary entire infentibility to eloquence, poetry, or any of the fine arts, may juftly be confidered, as a bad fymptom in youth; and fuppofes them inclined to low gratifications, or capable of being engaged only in the common purfuits of life.

Improvement of Tafte feems to be more or lefs connected with every good and virtuous difpofition. By giving frequent exercife to the tender and humane paffions a cultivated tafte increafes fenfibility; y et

at the fame time it tends to foften the more violent and angry emotions.

Ingenuas didiciffe fideliter artes Emollit mores, nec finit effe feros. Thefe polifit'd arts have humaniz'd mankind, Soften'd the rude, and calm'd the boilferous mind,

Poetry, Eloquence, and Hiftory continually exhibit to our view thofe elevated fendtiments and high examples, which tend to nourifh in our minds public fipirit, love of glory, contempt of external fortune, and admiration of every thing truly great, noble, and illuftrious.

# TASTE.

ASTE is " the power of receiving pleafure or " pain from the beauties or deformities of Nature " and of Art.) It is a faculty common in fome degree to all men. Through the circle of human nature nothing is more general, than the relifh of Beauty of one kind or other ; of what is orderly, proportioned, grand, harmonious, new, or fprightly. Nor does there prevail lefs generally a difrelifh of whatever is grofs, disproportioned, disorderly, and discordant. In children the rudiments of Tafte appear very early in a thousand instances ; in their partiality for regular bodies, their fondness for pictures and statues, and their warm attachment to whatever is new or aftonifhing. The most stupid peafants receive pleasure from tales and ballads, and are delighted with the beautiful appearances of nature in the earth and heavens. Even in the deferts of America, where human nature appears in its mole uncultivated flate, the favages have their ornaments of drefs, their war and their death fongs, their harangues and their orators.

B

### ON TASTE.

The principles of Tafte muft therefore be deeply founded in the human mind. To have fome differiment of Beauty is no lefs effential to man, than to poffefs the attributes of fpeech and reafon.

Though no human being can be entirely devoid of this faculty, yet it is polfelfed in very different degrees. In fome men only faint glimmerings of Tafte are viible; the beauties, which they relift are of the coarfelkind; and of these they have only a weak and confused imprefilion; while in others Tafte rifes to an acute difcernment, and a lively enjoyment of the moft refined beauties.

This inequality of Tafte among men is to be afcribed undoubtedly in part to the different frame of their natures ; to nicer organs, and more delicate internal powers, with which fome are endued beyond others; yet it is owing fill more to culture and education. Tafte is certainly one of the moft improveable faculties of our nature. We may eafly be convinced of the truth of this affertion by only reflecting on that immenfe fuperiority, which education and improvement give to civilized above babraous.nations in refinement of Tafte ; and on the advantage, which they give in the fame nation to thofe, who have fludied the liberal arts, above the rude and illiterate vulgar.

Reafon and good fenfe have fo extensive an influence on all the operations and decisions of Take, that a completely good Tafte may well be confidered, as a power compounded of natural fentibility to beauty and of improved understanding.) To be fastisfied of this, we may obferve, that the greater part of the productions of Genius are no other, than imitations of nature ; reprefentations of the characters, actions, or manners of men. Now the pleafure, we expetience from fuch imitations or reprefentations, is founded on mere Tafte; but to judge, whether they be properly executed, belongs to the understanding, which compares the copy with the original.

In reading, for inflance, the *i*Eneid of Virgil a great part of our pleafure ariles from the proper conduct of the plan or flory; i from all the parts being joined to gether with probability and due connection; ; from the adoption of the characters from nature, the correfpcadence of the fentiments to the characters, and of the flyle to the fentiments. The pleafure, which is derived from a poem fo conducted, is felt or enjoyed by Talte, as an internal fende ; but the difference of this conduct in the poem is to difference fuch propriety in the conduct, the greatter will be our pleafure.

The conflituents of Tafte, when brought to its most perfect flate, are two, Delicacy and Correctness.

Delicacy of Tafte refers principally to the perfection of that natural fonfibility, on which Tafte is founded. It implies thole finer organs or powers, which enable us to difcover beauties, that are concealed from a vulgar eye. It is judged of by the fame marks, that we employ in judging of the delicacy of an external fenfe. As the goodnels of the palate is not tried by flrong flavours, but by a mixture of ingredients, where, notwithflanding the confution, we remain fenfible of each ; fo dolicacy of internal Taffe appears by a quick and lively fenfibility to its finelt, moft compounded, or moft latent cojects.

<sup>6</sup> Correctines of Talk refpects the improvement, this faculty receives through its connection with the underikanding., A man of correct Talk is one, who is never imposed on by counterfeit beauties; who carries always in his own mind that flandard of good fenfe, which he employs in judging of every thing. He effimates with propriety the relative merit of the feveral beauties, which he meets in any work of genius; refers them to their proper claffes; a difgant the principles as far, as they can be traced, whence their power of pleasing is derived; and is pleafed hindfelf precify in that degree, in which he ought, and no more.

Table is certainly not an arbitrary principle, which is fubject to the fancy of every individual, and which admits no criterion for determining, whether it be true or falle. Its foundation is the fame in every human mind. It is built upon featiments and perceptions, which are infourable from our nature; and which generally operate with the fame uniformity, as our other intelledtual principles. When their femiments are perverted by ignorance or prejudice, they may be reclified by reation. Their found and natural flate is finally determined by comparing them with the general Tafte of mankind. Let men declaim as much, as they pleafe, concerning the caprice and uncertainty of Tafte; it is found by experience, that there are beauties, which, if difplayed in a proper light, have power to command lafting and univerfal admiration. In every composition, what interefly the imagination, and touches the heart, gives pleafure to all ages and nations. There is a certain ftring, which being properly flruck, the human heart is fo made, as to accord to it.

Hence the univerfal teftimony, which the moft improved nations of the earth through a long feries of ages have concurred to beflow on fome few works of genius ; fuch, as the Iliad of Homer, and the Zhaeld of Virgil. Hence the authority, which fuch works have obtained, as fundards of poetical compolicion ; fince by them we are enabled to collech, what the fenfe of mankind is with respect to thofe beauties, which give them the highest pleafare, and which therefore poetry cught to exhibit. Authority or prejudice may in one age or country give a floatified reputation to an indifferent poet, or a bad artift ; but, when foreigners, or polerity examine his works, bit faults are diffeovered, and the genuine Taide

### CRITICISM.

of human nature is feen. Time overthrows the illufions of opinion, but establishes the decisions of natures

# CRITICISM—GENIUS—PLEASURES OF TASTE—SUBLIMITY IN OBJECTS.

RUE CRITICISM is the application of Tafle and of good fenfe to the feveral fine arts. Its defign is to diffinguilh, what is beautiful and what is faulty in every performance. From particular inflances it accends to general principles; and gradually forms rules or conclutions concerning the feveral kinds of Beauty in works of Genius.

Criticifm is an art, founded entirely on experience; on the obfervation of fuch beauties, as have been found to pleafe mankind moft generally. ) For example, Ariflotle's rules concerning the unity of adion in dramatic and epic composition were not first discovered by logical reafoning, and then applied to poetry; but they were deduced from the practice of Homer and Sophocks. They were founded upon obferving the fupetior pleafure, which we derive from the relation of an action, which is one and entire, beyond what we receive from the relation of fastered and unconnected fasts.

A fupertor Genius indeed will of himfelf, uninftruded, compoft in fuch manner, as is agreeable to the moft important rules of Criticifin; for, as their rules are founded in nature, nature will frequent:

6

ly fuggeft them in practice. Homer was acquainted with no fystem of the art of poetry. Guided by Genius alone, he composed in verse a regular ftory. which all fucceeding ages have admired. This however is no argument against the usefulness of Criticism. For, fince no human genius is perfect, there is no writer, who may not receive affiftance from critical obfervations upon the beauties and faults of those, who have gone before him. No rules indeed can fupply the defects of genius, or infpire it, where it is wanting ; but they may often guide it into its proper channel ; they may correct its extravagancies, and teach it the most just and proper imitation of nature. Critical rules are intended chiefly to point out the faults, which ought to be avoided. We must be indebted to nature for the production of eminent beauties.

GENUS is a word, which in common acceptation extends much farther, than to objects of Tafte. It frainfes that talent or aptitude, which we receive from mature, in order to excel in any one thing whatever. A man is fail to have a genius for mathematics as well, as a genius for poetry; a genius for war, for politier, or for any mechanical employment.

Genius may be greatly improved by art and fludy ; but by them alone it cannot be acquired. As it is a higher freulty than Tafte, it is ever, according to the common frugality of nature, more licited in the fighers of its operations. There are per-

# PLEASURES OF TASTE.

fons, not unfrequently to be met, who have an excellent Tafte in feveral of the polite arts ; fuch, as mulic, poetry, painting, and eloquence ; but an excellent performer in all these arts is very feldom found ; or rather is not to be looked for. A univerfal Genius, or one who is equally and indifferently inclined toward feveral different professions and arts, is not likely to excel in any. Although there may be fome few exceptions, yet in general it is true, that, when the mind is wholly directed toward fome one object exclusively of others, there is the fairest prospect of eminence in that, whatever it may be. Extreme heat can be produced, only when the rays converge to a fingle point. Young perfons are highly interefted in this remark : fince it may teach them to examine with care, and to purfue with ardor that path, which nature has marked out for their peculiar exertions.

The nature of Tafte, the nature and importance of Criticiffn, and the difficient between Tafte and Genius, being thus explained; the fources of the Pleafures of Tafte final next be confidered. Here a very extensive field is opened; no lefs, than all the Pleafures of the Imagination, as they are generally called, whether afforded us by natural objects, or by imitations and defiriptions of them. It is not however necessary to the purpole of the prefeat work, that all their be examined fully; the pleafure, which we receive from diffeorie of writing, being the principal ebject of them. Our de-

### PLEASURES OF TASTE

fign is to give fome opening into the Pleafures of Tafte in general, and to infift more particularly upon Sublimity and Beauty.

We are far from having yet attained any fyftem concerning this fubject. A regular inquiry into it was first attempted by Mr. Addison in his Esfay on the Pleafures of the Imagination. By him these Pleafures are ranged under three heads, Beauty, Grandeur, and Novelty. His fpeculations on this fubject, if not remarkably profound, are very beautiful and entertaining ; and he has the merit of having discovered a track, which was before untrodden. Since his time the advances, made in this part of philosophical criticifm, are not confiderable ; which is owing doubtless to that thinness and fubtility, which are difcovered to be properties of all the feelings of Tafte. It is difficult to enumerate the feveral objects, which give pleafure to Tafte ; it is more difficult to define all thofe, which have been difcovered, and to range them in proper claffes ; and, when we would proceed farther, and investigate the efficient caules of the pleafure, which we receive from fuch objects, here we find ourfelves at the greateft lofs. For example, we all learn by experience that fome figures of bodies appear more beautiful than others ; on farther inquiry we difwhich we difcern in them ; but, when we endeavour to go a ftep beyond this, and inquire, why regularity and variety produce in our minds the feafation of beauty; any reafon, we can affign, is extremely imperfect. Those first principles of internal feafation nature appears to have fludioufly concealed.

It is fome confolation however, that, although the efficient caufe is obfcure, the final caufe of thole fendtions lies commendy more open ; and here we mult obferve the firong imprefilion, which the powers of Tafle and Imagination are calculated to give us of the benevolence of our Creator. By thele powers he hash widdly calarged the fphere of the pleafures of human hife ; and thole too of a kind the moft pure and innocent. The neceffary purpoles of life might have been anfwered, though our fendes of feeing and hearing had only ferved to diffuguith external objects, without giving us any of thole refined and delicate fendations of beauty and grandeur, with which we are now fo much delighted.

The pleafure, which arifes from fublimity or grandaur, deforves to be fully confidered ; becaufe it has a eharafter more precife and dilitedly marked, than any other of the pleafures of the imagination, and becaufe it coincides more diredly with our main fubjed. The funplef form of external grandeur is feen in the valt and boundlefs prospects, prefetted to us by nature ; fuch, as widdly extended plairs, of which the eye can find no limits; the firmament of heaven ; or the boundlefs erpeake of the ocean. All valuefs produces the imprefiles

of fublimity. Space however, extended in length, makes not fortrong an imprelion, as height or depth. Though a boundle's plain is a grand object ; yet a lofty mountain, to which we look up, or an awful precipice or tower, whence we look down on chjicts below, is fill more fo. The excellive grandeur of the firmament arics from its height, added to its boundle's extent; and that of the ocean, not from its extent alone, but from the continual motion and irrefultible force of that maß of waters. Wherever fpace is concerned, it is evident, that amplitude or greatnets of extent in one dimension or other is neceffary to grandeur. Remove all bounds from any object, and you immediately render it fublime. Hence infinite fpace, endles numbers, and estraal duration fill the mind with great ideas.

The moft copious fource of fublime ideas feems to be derived from the exertion of great power and force. Hence the grandeur of earthquakes and burning mountains; of great conflagrations; of the boilterous occan; of the tempefluous form; of thunder and lightning; and of all the unufual violence of the elements. A fream, which glides along gently within its banks, is a beautiful object; but, when it rufhes down with the impetuofity and noife of a torrent, it immediately becomes a fublime one. A race bouch is sizeway with pleafure; but it is the war horfe, " whofe nock is clothed with " thunder," that conveys grandeur in its idea. The emgagement of two powerful armine, as it is the higheft extrained human flyingth, combines various fources of

the fublime ; and has confequently been ever confidered, as one of the most driking and magnificent ipoftaeles, which can be either prefented to the eye, or exhibited to the imagination in defoription.

All ideas of the folemn and awful kind, and even bordering on the terrible, tend greatly to affift the fublime; fuch, as darknefs, foltude, and filtence. The firmament, when filled with flars, feattered in infinite numbers and with fjlendid profutforo, firikes the imagination with more awful grandeur, than when we behold it enlightened by all the fplendor of the fun. The deep found of a great bell, or the flriking of a great clock, is at any time grand and awful; but, when heard amid the filence and fullinefs of night, they become doubly fo. Darknefs is very generally applied for adding fublimity to all our ideas of the Deity. "He maketh darknefs his pavilion ; he dwelleth in the "thick cloud." Thus Mitoa—

### -----How oft amid

Thick clouds and dark does Heaven's allruling Sire Chook to refide, his glory unobfeured ; And with the majefty of darknefs round Circles his Throne——

Obfeurity is favorable to the fublime. The deforiptions, given us of appearances of fupernatural being, carry fome fublimity; though the conception, which they afford us, be confuded and indifinit. Their fublimity artis, from the ideas, which they always convey.

of fuperior power and might connected with awful obfourity. No ideas, it is evident, are fo fublime, as thofe derived from the Supreme Being, the moti unknown, yet the greatest of all objects; the infinity of whofe nature and the eternity of whofe duration, added to the omnipotence of his power, though they furpafs our conceptions, yet exait them to the highel.

Diforder is allo very compatible with grandeur; nay, frequently heightens it. Few things, which are exactly rogular and methodical, appear fublime. We fee the limits on every fide; we feel ourfelves confined; there is no room for any confiderable exertion of the mind. Though exact proportion of parts enters often into the beautiful, it is much difegarded in the fublime. A great mafs of rocks, thrown together by the hand of nature with wildnefs and confution, thrikes the mind with more grandeur, than if they had been adjufted to each other with the moft accurate fymmetry.

There yet remains one class of Sublime Objects to be mentioned, which may be termed the Moral or Sentimental Sublime, ariting from certain excitons of the mind; from certain affections and actions of our fellow creatures. | Thefe will be found to be chiefly of that clafs, which comes under the name of Magnaaimity or Heroifm; and they produce an effect very finillar to what is produced by a view of grand objects in nature, filling the mind with admiration, and raifing it above title!. Wherever in fome critical and dangerous fitua-

C

tion we behold a man uncommonly intrepid, and refiing folely upon himfelf; fuperior to paffion and to fear; animated by fome great principle to contempt of popular opinion, of felfih interft, of dangers, or of death; we are there ftruck with a fenfe of the fublime. Thus Porus, when taken by Alexander after a gallant defence, being affsed, in what manner he would be treated; anfwrerd, " Like a King;" and Cæfar chiding the pilot, who was affraid to fet out with him in a florm, " Quid times? Caefarem vehis," are good inflances of the Sentimental Sublime.

The fublime in natural and in moral objects is prefented to us in one view, and compared together, in the following beautiful paffage of Akenfide's Pleafures of the Imagination.

Jook then abroad through nature to the range Of planets, funs, and adamantine fpheres, Wheeling, unflaken, thro' the void immenfs ; And fpeak, O Man ; does this capacious fece With half that kindling majefly dilate Thy flrong conception, as when Bratus rofe Refugent from the flroke of Casfar's fate Amid the crowed of Patiots ; and his arm Aloft extending, like eternal Jove, When guilt brings down the thander, calld aloue On Tully's name, and flook his crimfon fleel, And bade the father of his country hail ! For lo the tyrant profitate on the duft; And Rome again is free.

14

It has been imagined by an ingenious Author, that terror is the fource of the fublime ; and that no objects have this character, but fuch, as produce impreffions of pain and danger. Many terrible objects are indeed highly fublime : nor docs grandeur refuse alliance with the idea of danger. But the fublime does not confift wholly in modes of danger and pain. In many grand objects there is not the leaft coincidence with terror ; as in the magnificent profpect of widely extended plains, and of the flarry firmament ; or in the moral dispofitions and fentiments, which we contemplate with high admiration. In many painful and terrible objects alfo, it is evident, there is no fort of grandeur. The amputation of a limb, or the bite of a fnake, is in the highest degree terrible ; but they are deftitute of all claim whatever to fublimity. It feems just to allow that mighty force or power, whether attended by terror or not, whether employed in protecting or alarming us, has a better title, than any thing yet mentioned, to be the fundamental quality of the fublime. There appears to be no fublime object, into the idea of which ftrength and force either enter not directly, or are not at least intimately affociated by conducting our thoughts to fome aftonishing power, as concerned in the production of the obiect.

15

# SUBLIMITY IN WRITING.

HE foundation of the Sublime in Composition must always be laid in the nature of the object defcribed. Unlefs it be fuch an object, as, if prefented to our fight, if exhibited to us in reality, would excite ideas of that elevating, that awful, and magnificent kind, which, we call Sublime : the defcription, however finely drawn, is not entitled to be placed under this clafs. This excludes all objects, which are merely beautiful, gay or elegant. Befide the object must not only in itself be fublime, but it must be placed before us in fuch a light, as is best calculated to give us a clear and full impreffion of it ; it must be described with strength, concisenefs, and fimplicity.) This depends chiefly upon the lively imprefiion, which the poet or orator has of the object, which he exhibits ; and upon his being deeply. affected and animated by the fublime idea, which he would convey. If his own feeling be languid, he can never infpire his reader with any ftrong emotion. Inftances, which on this fubject are extremely neceffary, will clearly flow the importance of all thefe requifites.

It is chiefly among antient authors, that we are to look for the moft firking inflances of the fublimes. The early ages of the world and the unculviated flate of fociety were peculiarly favorable to the emotions of fublimity. The genus of men was then very prone to admiration and aftonifhment. Meeting continually new and ftrange objects, their imagination was kept glowings.

# SUBLIMITY IN WRITING.

and their paffions were often raifed to the utmoft. They thought and expressed themselves boldly without reftraint. In the progress of fociety the genius and manners of men have undergone a change more favorable to accuracy, than to ftrength or fublimity.

Of all writings, antient or modern, the Sacred Scriptures afford the most striking instances of the fublime. In them the defcriptions of the Supreme Being are wonderfully noble, both from the grandeur of the object, and the manner of representing it. What an affemblage of awful and fublime ideas is prefented to us in that paffage of the eighteenth pfalm, where an appearance of the Almighty is defcribed ! " In my diftrefs I " called upon the Lord ; he heard my voice out of his " temple, and my cry came before him. Then the " earth fhook and trembled ; the foundations of the " hills were moved : becaufe he was wroth. He bow-" ed the heavens, and came down, and darknefs was " under his feet ; and he did ride upon a cherub, and " did fly ; yea he did fly upon the wings of the wind. "He made darknefs his fecret place; his pavilion " round about him were dark waters and thick clouds " of the fky." 'The circumftances of darkness and terror are here applied with propriety and fuccefs for heightening the fublime ...

The celebrated inflance, given by Longinus, from Mofes, "God faid, let there be light; and there was "light," belongs to the true fublime; and its fublimi-

C 2

ty arifes from the firong conception, it conveys, of an effort of power producing its effect with the unmoft fipeed and facility. A fimilar thought is magnificently expanded in the following paffage of Ifaiah (chap. xxiv. 24, 27, 28.) "Thus faith the Lord, thy Redeemer, " and he, that formed thee from the womb; I am " the Lord, that maketh all things; that firetcheth " forth the heavens alone; that firetacheth abroad the " earth by myfelf; that faith to the deep, be dry, and " I will dry up thy rivers; that faith of Cyrus, he is " my fhepherd, and thall perform all my pleafure ; " even faying to Jerufalem, thou thalt be built; and to " the Temple, thy foundation thall be laid."

Homer has in all ages been univerfally admired for fublimity ; and he is indebted for much of his grandeur to that native and unaffected fimplicity, which characterizes his manner. His defcriptions of conflicting armies ; the fpirit, the fire, the rapidity, which he throws into his battles, prefent to every reader of the Iliad frequent inftances of fublime writing. The majefty of his warlike fcenes is often heightened in a high degree by the introduction of the gods. In the twentieth book, where all the gods take part in the engagement, according as they feverally favor either the Grecians or the Trojans, the poet appears to put forth one of his higheft efforts, and the defeription rifes into the moft awful magnificence. All nature appears in commotion. Jupiter thunders in the heavens ; Neptune firikes the earth with his trident ; the flips, the city, and the

#### SUBLIMITY IN WRITING.

mountains fhake r the earth trembles to its centre r Pluto flatts from his throne, fearing, left the ferrets of the inferral regions fhould be laid open to the view of mortals. We fhall transfictibe Mr. Pope's transfation of this paffage ; which, though inferior to the original, is highly animated and fublime.

But, when the Powers defcending fwell'd the fight, Then tumult rofe, fierce rage, and pale affright, Now thro' the trembling fhores Minerva calls, And now the thunders from the Greeian walls. Mars, hovering o'er his Troy, his terror fhrouds In gloomy tempefts, and a night of clouds ; Now thro' each 'Trojan heart he fury pours With voice divine from Ilion's topmoft towers : Above the Sire of gods his thunder rolls. And peals on peals redoubled rend the poles. Beneath ftern Neptune fhakes the folid ground, The forefts wave, the mountains nod around : Thro' all her fummits tremble Ida's woods. And from their fources boil her hundred floods : Troy's turrets totter on the rocking plain. And the tofs'd navies beat the heaving main; Deep in the difmal region of the dead The infernal Monarch rear'd his horrid head. Leap't from his throne, left Neptune's arm fhould lay His dark dominions open to the day. And pour in light on Pluto's drear abodes, Abhorr'd by men, and dreadful e'en to Gods. Such wars the Immortals wage ; fuch horrors rend The world's vaft concave, when the gods contend.

Concifeness and fimplicity will ever be found effential

to fublime writing. Simplicity is properly oppofed to studied and profuse ornament ; and conciseness to fuperfluous expression. It will easily appear, why a defect either in concilencis or fimplicity is peculiarly hurtful to the fublime. The emotion, excited in the mind by fome great or noble object, raifes it confiderably above its common pitch. A fpecies of enthusiafm is produced, extremely pleafing, while it lafts; but the mind is tending every moment to fink into its ordinary ftate. When an author has brought us, or is endeavouring to bring us into this flate, if he multiply words unneceffarily ; if he deck the fublime object on all fides with glittering ornaments ; nay, if he throw in any one decoration, which falls in the leaft below the principal. image ; that moment he changes the key ; he relaxes the tenfion of the mind ; the ftrength of the feeling is emafculated ; the Beautiful may remain ; but the fublime is extinguished. Homer's description of the nod of Jupiter, as fhaking the heavens, has been admired in all ages, as wonderfully fublime ... Literally translated, it runs thus ; " He fpoke, and bending his fable brows-" gave the awful nod ; while he fhook the celeftial locks " of his immortal head, all Olympus was fhaken." Mr. Pope translates it thus ;

He fpoke; and awful bends his fable brows; Shakes his ambrofial curls, and gives the nod; The flamp of fate, and fanchion of a god; High heaven with trembling the dread fignal took; And all Olympus to its centre flook.

#### SUBLIMITY IN WRITING.

The image is expanded, and attempted to be beautifield ; but in reality it is weakened. The third line, "The flamp of fate, and fandion of a God," is entirely expletive, and introduced only to fill up the rhyme ; for it interrupts the defaription, and clogs the image. For the fame readon Jupiter is reprefented, as flaking his locks, before he gives the nod ; " Shakes his amboridal curls, "and gives the nod ;" which is trifling and infignificant ; whereas in the original the flaking of his hair is the confequence of his nod, and makes a happy picturefque circumitance in the defaription.

The boldnefs, freedom, and variety of our blank verfe are infinitely more propitious, than rhyme, to all kinds of fublime poetry. The fulled proof of this is afforded by Milton ; an author, whole genius led him peculiarly to the fublime. The first and fecond books of Paradife Loft are continued examples of it. Take for inflance the following noted defoription of Satan, after his fall appearing at the head of his infernal hofts;

Perplexes monarchs. Darkened fo, yet fhone Above them all the Archangel.

Here various fources of the fullime are joined together; the principal object fuperlatively great; a high, fuperior nature, fallen indeed, but raifing tifelf againd diffrefs; the grandeur of the principal object heightened by connecting it with fo noble an idea, as that, of the fun fuffering an eclipte; this picture, thataded with all those images of change and trouble, of darknefs and terror, which coincide fo exquifitely with the fublime emotion; and the whole expredied in a flyle and verification cufy, natural, and fumple, but magnificent.

Befide fimplicity and concileness frength is effentially neceffary to fublime writing. Strength of defcription proceeds in a great measure from concileness; but it implies fomething more, namely a judicious choice of circumftances in the defcription ; fuch, as will exhibit the object in its full and most striking point of view. For every object has feveral faces, by which it may be prefented to us, according to the circumftances, with which we furround it ; and it will appear fuperlatively fublime, or not, in proportion, as these circumstances are happily chosen, and of a fublime kind. In this the great art of the writer confilts ; and indeed the principal difficulty of fublime defeription. If the defeription be too general, and divested of circumstances ; the object is fhewn in a faint light, and makes a feeble impreffion, or no impression, on the reader. At the fame time, if.

SUBLIMITY IN WRITING.

any trivial or improper circumftances be mingled, the whole is degraded.

The nature of that emotion, which is aimed at by fublime defeription, admits no medicerity, and cannot fubfif in a midel fatte ; but muft either highly transfjoer us; or, if unfuccefsful in the execution, leave us exceedingly difgufted. We attempt to rife with the writer; the imagination is awakened, and, put upon the Aretch; but it ought to be fupported; and, if in the midfl'of its effort it be deferted unexpediedly, it fulls with a painful flock. When Milton in his battle of the Angels defribes them, as tearing up monutains, and throwing them at one another; there are in his defiription, as Mr. Addifon has remarked, no circumflances, but what are truly fublime :

From their foundations loosening to and fro, They pluck'd the feated hills with all their load, Rocks, waters, woods; and by the fhaggy tops Uplifting bore them in their hands.

This idea of the giants throwing the mountains, which is in itielf fo grand, Claudian renders burleque and ridiculous by the fingle circumfance of one of his giants with the mountain Ida upon his fhoulders, and a river, which flowed from the mountain, running down the giant's back, as he held it up in that pofture. Virgil in his defoription of mount *IE*tna is guilty of a flight inaccoracy of this kind. After feveral magnificent images the poet concludes with perfonifying the mountain arder this figure,

#### " Eructans vifcera cum gemitu"-----

<sup>44</sup> belching up its bowels with a grean ;<sup>47</sup> which by making the mountain refemble a fick or dranken perfon degrades the majefly of the defcription. The debafing effect of this idea will appear in a ftronger light from obferving, what figure it makes in a poem of Sir Richard Blackmore ; who though an extrawagant perverfity of talle felected it for the principal circumflance in his defription ; and thereby, as Dr. Arburthnot humoroully obferves, reprefented the mountain, as in a fit of the cholic.

Aftna and all the burning monstains find Their kindled flores with inbred florms of wind Blown up to rage, and rearing out complain, As torn with inward gripes and torturing pain ; Laboring they eaft their dreadful works for And with their melted bowels foread the ground.

Such inflances flow how much the fublime depends upon a proper filedition of circumflances ; and with how great care every circumflance muft be avoided, which by approaching in the finalleft degree to the mean, or even to the gay or trifling, changes the tone of the emotion.

What is commonly called the fublime ftyle, is for the moft part a very bad one, and has no relation whatever to the true Sublime. Writers are apt to imagine that fplendid words, accumulated epithets, and a certain fwelling kind of expression, by rifug above what is cuf-

### SUBLIMITY IN WRITING.

temary or vulgar, conflictness the fublime; y set nothing is in reality more fulfe. In genuine inflances of fublime writing nothing of this kind appears. "G Go faid, "let there be light; and there was light." This is firthing and fublime; but put it into what is commonly called the fublime flyle; "The Sovereign Arbiter of na-"ture by the potent energy of a fingle word commanded "the light to exift," and, as Boilean juffly obferved, the flyle is indeed raifed, but the thought is degraded. In general it may be obferved, that the fublime lies in the thought, not in the exprefion; and, when the thought is really noble, it will generally clothe itfelf in a mative majefly of language.

The faults, oppolite to the fublime, are principally two, the Frigid and the Bombail. The Frigid confils in degrading an object or fentiment, which is fublime in itfelf, by a mean conception of it; or by a weak, low, or puerile defoription of it.) This betrays entire ablence, or at leaft extreme poverty of genius. (The Bombail lies in forcing a common or trivial object out of its rank, and in laboring to raife it into the fublime; or in attempting to exalt a fublime object beyond all, natural bounds.) BEAUTY AND OTHER PLEASURES OF TASTE.

BEAUTY next to Sublimity affords the higheft pleafure to the imagination. The emotion, which it raifes, is eafily diffinguished from that of sublimity. ) It is of a calmer kind ; more gentle and foothing ; does not elevate the mind fo much, but produces a pleafing ferenity. I Sublimity excites a feeling, too violent to be lafting ; the pleafure, proceeding from Beauty, admits longer duration. It .extends also to a much greater variety of objects, than fublimity ; to a variety indeed fo great, that the fenfations, which beautiful objects excite, differ exceedingly, not in degree only, but also in kind, from each other. Hence no word is used in a more undetermined fignification, than Beauty. It is applied to almost every external object, which pleases the eye or the car ; to many of the graces of writing ; to feveral difpolitions of the mind ; nay, to fome objects of abstract feience. We speak frequently of a beautiful tree or flower ; a beautiful poem ; a beautiful character ; and a beautiful theorem in mathematics.

Colog forms to afford the fimpleft inflance of Beauty-Afforiation of ideas, it is probable, has fome influence on the pleafure, which we receive from colors. Green, for example, may appear more beautiful from being connected in our ideas with rural feenes and prophects ; white with innocence; blue with the ferently of the fey-Independently of afforiations of this feet all, the

## PLEASURES OF TASTE.

ean farther obferve refpeding colors, is that thofe, cho<sup>-\*</sup>, fen for Beauty, are commonly delicate rather, than glaring. Such are the feathers of feveral kinds of birds, the leaves of flowers, and the fine variation of colors, flown by the fky at the rifing and fitting of the fun.

Figure opens to us forms of Beauty more complex and diversified. Regularity first offers itself, as a fource of Beauty. By a regular figure is meant one, which we perceive to be formed according to fome certain rule, and not left arbitrary or loofe in the construction of its parts. Thus a circle, a fquare, a triangle, or a hexagon, gives pleafure to the eve by its regularity, as a beautiful figure ; yet a certain graceful variety is foundto be a much more powerful principle of Beauty. Regularity feems to appear beautiful to us chiefly, if not entirely, on account of its fuggefling the ideas of fitnefs, propriety, and ufe, which have always a more intimate connection with orderly and proportioned forms, than with those, which appear not constructed according to any certain rule. Nature, who is the most graceful artist, hath in all her ornamental works purfued variety with an apparent neglect of regularity. Cabinets, doors, and windows are made after a regular form, in cubes and parallelograms, with exact meproportion of parts ; and thus formed they pleafe the eye for this just reafon, that, being works of ufe, they are by fuch figures better adapted to the ends, for which they were defigned. But plants, flowers, and leaves are full of variety and diverfity. A ftraight canal

is an infpid figure, when compared with the meanders of a river. Cones and pyramids have their degree of beauty; but trees, growing in their natural wildnefs, have infinitely more beauty, than when trimmed into pyramids and cones. The appartments of a houfe mult be difpofed with regularity for the convenience of its inhabitants; but a garden, which is intended merely for beauty, would be extremely diguffing, if it had as, much uniformity and order, as a dwelling houfe.

Motion affords another fource of Beauty, diffinct from figure. Motion of itfelf is pleafing ; and bodies in motion are, " cæteris paribus," univerfally preferred fuch, as that of a torrent, it partakes of the fublime. The motion of a bird gliding through the air is exquifitely beautiful ; but the fwiftnefs, with which lightning darts through the fky, is magnificent and aftonifling. Here it is neceffary to obferve, that the fenfations of fublime and beautiful are not always diffinguished by very diftant boundaries ; but are capable in many infances of approaching toward each other. Thus a gently running ftream is one of the most beautiful objects in nature ; but, as it fwells gradually into a great river, the beautiful by degrees is loft in the fublime. A. is a venerable and fublime one. To return, however, to the beauty of motion, it will be found to hold very generally, that motion in a ftraight line is not fo beautiful,

#### PLEASURES OF TASTE.

as in a waving direction; and motion upward is commonly more pleafing, than motion downward. The eafy, curling motion of flame and flowles is an object flingularly agreeable. Hogarth obferves very ingenioufly, that all the common and neceffary motions for the bafineds of life are performed in ftraight or plain lines ; but that all the graceful and omamental movements are made in curve lines ; an obfervation, worthy of the attention of thofe, who fludy the grace of getture and adion.

Color, figure, and motion, though feparate principles of Beauty, yet in many beautiful objects meet together, and thereby render the beauty greater and more complex. Thus in flowers, trees, and animals we are entertained at once with the delicacy of the color, with the gracefulness of the figure, and fometimes also with the motion of the object. The most complete affemblage of beautiful objects, which can be found, is prefented by a rich natural landfcape, where there is a fufficient variety of objects ; fields in verdure, feattered trees and flowers, running water, and animals grazing. If to thefe be added fome of the productions of art, fuitable to fuch a fcene ; as a bridge with arches over a river, fmoke riling from cottages in the midft of trees, and a diftant view of a fine building feen by the rifing fun ; we then enjoy in the highest perfection that gay, cheerful, and placid fenfation, which characterizes Beauty.

The beauty of the human countenance is more com-

 $D_2$ 

plex, than any, we have yet examined. It comprehends. the Beauty of color, arifing from the delicate fhades of the complexion ; and the Beauty of figure, arifing from. the lines, which conflitute different features of the face. But the principal Beauty of the countenance depends upon a mysterious expression, which it conveys, of the qualities of the mind ; of good fenfe, or good humor ; of candor, benevolence, fenfibility, or other amiable difpolitions. It may be obferved, that there are certain qualities of the mind, which, whether expressed in the countenance, or by words, or by actions, always raife in us a feeling fimilar to that of Beauty. There are two great claffes of moral qualities ; one is of the high and the great virtues, which require extraordinary efforts, and is founded on dangers and fufferings ; as heroifm, magnanimity, contempt of pleafures, and contempt of death. These produce in the spectator an emotion of fublimity and grandeur. The other clafs is chiefly of the focial virtues ; and fuch, as are of a fofter and gentler kind ; as compaffion, mildnefs, and generofity. Thefe excite in the beholder a fenfation of pleafure, fo nearly allied to that excited by beautiful external objects, that, though of a more exalted nature, it may with propriety be claffed under the fame head.

Beauty of writing in its more definite fenfe characterizes a particular manner 5 fignifying a certain grace and amenity in the turn either of flyle or feutiment, by which fome authors are particularly diltinguifhed. In this fenfe it denotes a manner neither remarkably fub-

### PLEASURES OF TASTE.

lime, nor vehemently paffionate, nor uncommonly fparkling; but fuch, as excites in the reader an emotion of the placid kind/prefembling that, which is raifed by contemplation of beautiful objects in nature ; which neither lifts the mind very high, nor agitates it to excefs ; but fpreads over the imagination a pleafing ferenity/ Addion is a writer of this character, and one of the moft proper examples of it. Fenelon, the author of Telemachus, is another example. Virgil alio, though very capable of riting oceanionally into the fublime, yet generally is diffinguilhed by the character of beauty and grace rather, than of fublimity. Among orators Cicero has more of the beautiful, than Domolithenes, whole gemius led him wholly toward, vehemence and ftrength-

So much it is neceffary to have faid upon the fabject of Beauty; fince next to fablimity it is the molt copious fource of the Pleafures of Tafte. But objects delight the imagination not only by appearing under the forms of fablime or beautiful; they likewile derive their power of giving it pleafure from feveral other principles.

Novelty, for example, has been mentioned by Addifon, and by every writer on this fubject. An object, which has no other merit, than that of being new, by this quality alone raifes in the mind a vivid and an agreeable emotion. Hence that patifon of cutiofity, which prevails fo generally in mankind. Oblefs and ideas, which have been long familiar, make too faint an imprefion, to give an agreeable exercife to our faculties. New and firange objects route the mind from its dormant flate by giving it a fidden and pleafing impulte. Hence in a great meafure the entertainment, we receive from fiftion and romance. The emotion, raifed by Novelty, is of a more lively and awakening nature, than that produced by Beauty; but much florter in its duration. For, if the object have in itfelf no charms to hold our attention, the glofs, fpread over it by Novelty, foon wears off.

Imitation is another fource of pleafure to Tafke-This gives rife to what Addition terms the Secondary Pleafures of Imagination, which form a very extensive elafs. For all imitation affords fome Pleafure to the mind *i* not only the imitation of beautiful or fublime objects by recalling the original ideas of beauty or grandeur, which fuch objects themfelves exhibited *i* but even objects, which have neither beauty, nor grandeur *s*, may fome, which are terrible or deformed, give us pleafure in a fecondary or reprefeated view.

The pleafures of melody and harmony belong allo to Tafte. There is no d-lightful fenfation, we receive either from beauty or fublimity, which is not capable of being heightened by the power of mufical found. Hence the charm of poetical numbers; and even of the concealed and loofer measures of profe. Wit, humor, and ridicule open likewife a variety of pleafures to PLEASURES OF TASTE.

Take, altogether different from any, that have yet been confidered.

At prefent it is not necessary to purfue any farther the fubject of the Pleafures of Tafte. We have opened fome of the general principles ; it is time now to apply them to our chief fubject. If it be afked, to what clafs of those Pleasures of Taste, which have been enumerated, that pleafure is to be referred, which we receive from poetry, eloquence, or fine writing ? The anfwer is, not to any one, but to them all. This peculiar advantage writing and difcourfe poffers; they encompais a large and fruitful field on all fides, and have power to exhibit in great perfection, not a fingle fet of objects only, but almost the whole of those, which give pleasure to take and imagination ; whether that pleafure arife from fublimity, from beauty in its various forms, from defign and art, from moral fentiment, from novelty, from harmony, from wit, humor, or ridicule. To whichfoever of thefe a perfon's tafte is directed ; from fome writer or other he has it always in his power to seceive the gratification of it.

It has been ufual among critical writers to treat of difcourfe, as the chief of all the imitative arts. They compare it with painting and with fealpture, and in many refpects prefer it juilly before them. But we routh diftinguith between imitation and defeription. Words have no natural refemblance of the ideas or ob-

### ORIGIN AND PROGRESS

jects, which they fignify ; but a flatue or picture has a natural likenefs of the original.

34

As far however, as a poet or hiltorian introduces into his work perfons really fpeaking, and by words, which he puts into their mouths, reprefents the converfation, which they might be fuppofed to hold ; fo far his art may be called imitative ; and this is the cafe in •all dramatic composition. But in narrative or descriptive works it cannot with propriety be fo called. Who, for example, would call Virgil's description of a tempeft in the first Eneid an imitation of a ftorm ? If we heard of the imitation of a battle, we might naturally think of fome mock fight, or reprefentation of a battle on the flage ; but fhould never imagine it meant one of Homer's defcriptions in the Iliad. It must be allowed at the fame time, that imitation and defcription agree in their principal effect, that of recalling by external figns the ideas of things, which we do not fee. But, though in this they coincide ; yet it fhould be remembered, that the terms themfelves are not fynonimous; that they import different means of producing the fame end ; and confequently make different impreflices on the mind.

ORIGIN AND PROGRESS OF LANGUAGE. TO form an adequate idea of the Origin of Language, we mult contemplate the circumflances of mankind in their earlieft and rudit (tate. They were

## OF LANGUAGE.

then a wandering, feattered race; no fociety among them except families ; and family fociety alto very imperfect, as their mode of living, by hunting or pasturage, must have separated them frequently from each other. In fuch a condition, how could any one fet of founds or words be univerfally agreed on, as the figns of their ideas ? Supposing that a few, whom chance or neceffity threw together, agreed by fome means upon certain figns; yet by what authority could thefe be fo propagated among other tribes or families, as to grow up into a language ? One would imagine that men must have been previoufly gathered together in confiderable numbers, before language could be fixed and extended ; and yet on the other hand there feems to have been an abfolute neceffity of fpeech previoufly to the formation of fociety. For by what bond could a multitude of men be kept together, or be connected in profecution of any common interest, before by the affistance of fpeech they could communicate their wants and intentions to each other ? So that how fociety could fubfill previoufly to language, and how words could rife into language before the formation of fociety, feem to be points attended with equal difficulty. When we confider farther that curious analogy, which prevails in the conftruction of almost all languages, and that deep and fubtile logic, on which they are founded ; difficulties increase fo much upon on all fides, that there feems to be no fmall reafon for referring the origin of all linguage to divine infpiration.

## ORIGIN AND PROGRESS

<sup>48</sup> But, fuppofing language to have a divine origimal, we cannot imagine that a perfect fyltem of it was at once eiven to man. It is much more natural to fuppofe that God taught our firft parents only fuch language, as fuited their prefent occafions ; leaving them, as he did in other refpects, to enlarge and improve it, as their future necefflicts fhould require. Confequently thofe rudiments of fpeech mult have been poor and narrow ; and we are at liberty to inquire, in what manner, and by what fleps, language advanced to the flate, in which we now find it.

Should we fuppofe a period exifted, before words were invented or known; it is evident, that men could have no other method of communicating their feelings, than by the cries of paffion, accompanied by fuch motions and goftures, as were farther expressive of emotion. Thefe indeed are the only figns, which nature teaches all men, and which are underftood by all. One, who faw another going into fome place, where he himfelf had been frightened, or exposed to danger, and who wilhed to warn his neighbor of the danger, could contrive no other method of doing it, than by uttering those cries and making those gestures, which are the figns of fear ; .as two men at this day would endeavour to make themfelves understood by cach other, if thrown together on a defolate ifland, ignorant of each other's language. Those exclamations therefore, by grammarians called interjections, uttered in a ftrong and paffionate manner, were undoubtedly the elements of fpeech.

### OF LANGUAGE.

When more enlarged communication became requifite, and names began to be applied to objects ; how can we fuppofe men proceeded in this application of names, or invention of words ? Certainly by imitating as much, as they could, the nature of the object named by the found of the name given to it. As a painter, who would reprefent grafs, must employ a green color ; fo in the infancy of language one, giving a name to any thing harfh or boilterous, would of courfe employ a harfh or boifterous found. He could not do otherwife, if he defired to excite in the hearer the idea of that object, which he wifhed to name. To imagine words invented, or names given to things, without any ground or reason, is to suppose an effect without a cause. There must always have been fome motive, which led to one name, rather than another ; and we can suppose no motive, which would more generally operate upon men in their first efforts toward language, than a defire to paint of the human voice to effect this imitation.

Wherever objects were to be named, in which found, noilie, or motion was concerned, the imitation by words was fufficiently obvious. Nothing was more natural, than to imitate by the found of the voice the quality of the found or noile, which any external object produced; and to form its name accordingly. Thus, in all languages we diffeover a multitude of words, which are evi-

### ORIGIN AND PROGRESS

dently conftructed on this principle. A certain bird is called the Cuckoo from the found, which it emits. When one fort of wind is faid to *whight*, and another to *rear*; when a ferpent is faid to *hig i* a fly to *hueze*, and failing timber to *reagle ;* when a ftream is faid to *flowa*, and hail to *ratile ;* the refemblance between the word and the thing fignified is plainly difcernible. But in the names of objects, which addrefs the fight only, where neither noife, nor motion is concerned *;* and fail more in terms, appropriated to moral ideas, this analegy appears to fail. Yet many learned men have imagined that, though in fuch cafes it becomes more obfeure, it is not altogether lof *;* and that in the raalical words of all languages there may be traced forme degree of correfpondence with the objects fignified.

This principle however of a natural relation between words and objects can be applied to language only in its moft fimple and early fate. Though in every tongue fome remains of it-may be traced, it were utterly in vain to fearch for it through the whole confluction of any modern language. As terms increase in every vation, and the vaft field of language is filled up, words by a thoufand fanciful and irregular methods of deviation and composition deviate widely from the primitive charafter of their roots, and lofe all refemblance in found of the things fignified. This is the prefat flate of language. Words, as we new the them, taken in general, may be confidered, as fymbols, net initiations; as a side

### OF LANGUAGE.

trary or influtted, not natural figns of ideas. But there can be no doubt, that language, the nearer we approach to its rife among men, will be found to partake more of a natural exprefilon.

Interjections, it has been flown, or paffionate exclamations, were the elements of fpeech. Men labored to communicate their feelings to each other by those expreflive cries and geftures, which nature taught them. After words, or names of objects, began to be invented, this mode of fpeaking by natural figns could not be all at once difused. For language in its infancy must have been extremely barren ; and there certainly was a period among all rude nations, when converfation was carried on by a very few words, intermixed with many exclamations and earnest gestures. The small stock of words which men then poffeffed, rendered those helps entirely neceffary for explaining their conceptions ; and rude, uncultivated individuals, not having always ready even the few words, which they knew, would naturally labor to make themfelves underflood by varying their tones of voice, and by accompanying their tones with the most exprellive gesticulations.

To this mode of fpeaking neceffity gave rife. But we must obferve that, after this neceffity had in a great degree ceafed by language becoming in process of time more extensive and copious, the antient manner of fpecch fill lubified among many nations; and, what had ariten from neceffity, continued to be used for or-

### ORIGIN AND PROGRESS

nament. In the Greek and Roman languiges a mufical and getliculating pronunciation was retained in a very high degree. Without attending to this we shall be at a los in underflanding feveral paffages of the Claffics, which relate to the public fpeaking and theatrical entertainments of the antients. Our modern pronunciation would have feemed to them a lifelefs monotony. The declamation of their orators and the pronunciation of their actors upon the flage approached to the nature of recitative in mufic ; was capable of being marked by notes, and fupported by infruments ; as fevend learned men have proved.

With regard to gefure the cafe was parallel ; for frong tones and animated gefures always go together. The action both of orators and players in Greece and Rome was far more vehement, than that, to which we are accultomed. To us Rofeius would appear a madman. Gefure was of fuch confequence on the anitent flage, that there is reafon for believing that on fome occaifons the fpeaking and the ading were divided ; which, according to our ideas, would form a frange exhibition. One player fpoke the words in the proper tones, while another expredied the corresponding motions and gefures. Cicero tells us it was a contefl between him and Rofeius, whether he could express a featiment in agreater variety of phrafes, or Rofeius in a greater variety of intelligible fignificant geflures. At laft gefture engrofied the flage entirely ; for under the refigns

### OF LANGUAGE.

of Augultus and Tiberius the favorite entertainment of the Public was the Pantomime, which was carried on by geficiculation only. The people were moved, and wept at it as much, as at tragedies ; and the paffion for it became fo violent, that laws were made for reftraining the fenators from fludying the pantomime art. Now, though in declamations and theatrical exhibitions both tone and gefture were carried much farther, than in common diffourfe ; yet public fipeaking of any kind muft in every country bear fome proportion to the manner, which is ufed in converfation ; and fuch public entertanes and geftures in diffourier kere as languid, as ours.

(The early language of men, being entirely compoted of words deferiptive of fenfible objects, became of neceffity extremely metaphorical.) Fort of figuity any defice or paffion, or any act or feeling of the mind, they had no fixed expredition, which was appropriated to that purpofe ; but were obliged to paint the emotion or paffion, which they felt, by alluding to those fenfible objects, which had most connection with it, and which could render it in from degree widble to others.

But it was not necellity alone, that gave rife to this pictured flyle.) In the infancy of all focieties fear and furprife, wonder and aftonifhment, are the molt frequent pations of men. Their language will necelfaily be affedted by this character of their minds. They will be difpored to paint every thing in the flrongeft colors

## ORIGIN AND PROGRESS

Even the manner, in which the first tribes of men uttered their words, had confiderable influence on their flyle, Wherever firong exclamations, tones, and geflures are connected with convertation, the imagination is always more exercised; a greater effort of fancy and paffion is excited. Thus the fancy, being kept awake and rendered more fprightly by this mode of utterance, operates upon flyle, and gives it additional life and fpirit.

As one proof among many, which might be produced, of the truth of these observations, we shall tranferibe a fpeech from Colden's Hiftory of the Five Indian Nations, which was delivered by their Chiefs, when entering on a treaty of peace with us, in the following language. "We are happy in having buried under ground " the red axe, that has fo often been dyed in the " blood of our brethren. Now in this fort we inter the "axe, and plant the tree of peace. We plant a tree, " whofe top will reach the fun ; and its branches " fpread abroad fo, that it fhall be feen afar off. May " its growth never be fliffed and choked ; but may it " fhade both your country and ours with its leaves ! " Let us make fail its roots, and extend them to the ut-" most of your colonics. If the French should come, " to thake this tree, we fhould know it by the motion " of its roots reaching into our country. May the " Great Spirit allow us to reft in tranquillity upon our " mats, and never again dig up the axe, to cut down " the tree of peace ! Let the earth be trodden hard over

#### OF LANGUAGE.

<sup>6</sup> it, where it lies buried. Let a firong fiream run un-"der the pit, to waſh the evil away out of our fight and " remembrance. The fire, that had long burned in " Albany, is extinguifued. The bloody bed is waſhed " clean, and the tears are wiped from our eyes. We " now renew the covenant chain of firendflip. Let it " be kept bright and clean, as filver, and not fuffered " to contract any ruſt. Let not any one pull away his " arm from it."

As language in its progrefs grew more copious, it gradually loft that figurative flyle, which was its early character. The vehement manner of fpeaking by tones and geitures became lefs common. J Inftead of Poets Philolophers became the inftructors of men 2 and in their reafoning on all fubjects introduced that plainer and more imple flyle of composition, which we now call Profe. "Thus the antient metaphorical and poetical drefs of Language was at length laid afide in the intercourfe of men, and referved for thofe occations only, on which ornament was profetfedly fludied.

## RISE AND PROGRESS OF LANGUAGE AND OF WRITING.

W HEN we examine the order, in which words are: arranged in a fentence, we find a very remarkable difference between antient and modern tongues. The conideration of this will forve to unfold further the remius

## RISE AND PROGRESS OF

44

of Language, and to fhew the caufes of those alterations; it has undergone in the progress of fociety.

To conceive diffinctly the nature of this alteration. we must go back, as before, to the earliest period of Language. Let us figure to ourfelves a Savage beholding fome fruit, which he earnestly defires, and requests another to give him. Suppose him unacquainted with words, he would ftrive to make himfelf underflood by pointing eagerly at the object defired, and uttering at the fame time a paffionate cry. Supposing him to have acquired words, the first word, which he would utter. would be the name of that object. He would not exprefs himfelf according to our order of conftruction, " Give me fruit ;" but according to the Latin order, " Fruit give me," " Fructum da mihi," for this plain reafon, that his attention was wholly directed toward finit, the object defired. Hence we might conclude a priori, that this was the order, in which words were most commonly arranged in the infancy of Language ; and accordingly we find in reality that in this order words are arranged in most of the antient tongues, as in the Greek and Latin ; and it is faid likewife in the Ruffian, Sclavonic, Gäclic, and feveral American tongues.

The modern languages of Europe have adotped a different arrangement from the antient. In their profe compositions very little variety is admitted in the collocation of words; they are chiefly fixed to one order, which may be called the Order of the Underitanding.

## LANGUAGE AND OF WRITING.

They place first in the fentence the perfon or thing, which speaks or acts; next its action ; and laftly the object of its action. / Thus an English Writer, paying a compliment to a great man, would fay, " It is impoffi-" ble for me to pals over in filence fo diftinguished " mildnefs, fo fingular and unheard of clemency, and " fo uncommon moderation, in the exercise of supreme " power." Here is first prefented to us the perfon, who fpeaks, "It is impossible for me;" next, what the fame perfon is to do, " to pafs over in filence ;" and laftly the object, which excites him to action, " the mildness, clem-" ency, and moderation of his patron." Cieero, from whom these words are translated, reverses this order. He begins with the object ; places that first, which was the exciting idea in the fpeaker's mind, and ends with the fpeaker and his action. "Tantam manfuetudinem, " tam inulitatam inauditamque clementiam, tantumque " in fumma potestate rerum omnium modum, taeitus " nullo modo præterire poffum." Here, it must be obferved, the Latin order is more animated ; the English more clear and diffingt

/Our language naturally allows greater liberty for transpolition and invertion in poetry, than in profe. Even three however this liberty is confined within narrow limits in comparison with the antient languages. In this refpect modern tongues vary from each other. The Italian approaches the nearest in its character to the autient transposition ; the Englith has more inver-

## RISE AND PROGRESS OF

fion, than the reft; and the French has the leaft of all.

46

Writing is an improvement upon Speech, and confequently was policitor to it in order of time. Its charaders are of two kinds, figns of things and figns of words. Thus the pictures, hieroglyphics, and figmbol, employed by the Antients, were of the former fort; the alphabetical characters, now employed by Europeans, of the latter.

Pictures were certainly the first attempt toward writing. Mankind in all ages and in all nations have been prone to imitation. This would foon be employed for deforibing and recording events. Thus to fignify that one man had killed another, they painted the figure of one man lying on the ground, and of another flanding by him with a hoftle weapon in his hand. When America was first diffeovered, this was the only kind of writing, with which the Maxicans were acquainted. It was however a very imperfect mode of recording facts; fine by pictures external events only could be delineated.

Hisroglyphical characters may be confidered, as the fecond flage of the Art of Writing. They confid of certain fymbols, which are made to fland for invifiele objects on account of their fuppoid refemblance of the objects themfelves. Thus an eye reprefented knowledge; and a circle, having neither beginning, nor end, was the fymbol of eternity. Egypt was the country.

## LANGUAGE AND OF WRITING.

47

where this kind of writing was moft fludied, and brought into a regular art. By theie characters all the boaled witdom of their Priefs was conveyed. They pitched upon animals, to be the emblems of moral objects, according to the qualities, with which they fuppoled them to be endued. Thus imprudence was denominated by a fly; wildom by an ant; and victory by a hawk. Dut this fort of writing was in the higheft degree enigmatical and confuéd; and cnufequently a very imperfect whiche of knowledge.

From hieroglyphics fome nations gradually advanced to fimple arbitrary marks, which flood for objects, though without any refemblance of the objects fignified, Of this nature was the writing of the Peruvians. They on thefe, of different fizes and varioufly ranged, they invented figns for communicating their thoughts to one another. The Chinese at this day use written characters of this nature. They have no alphabet of letters or fimple founds, of which their words are composed ; but every fingle character, which they ufe, is expressive of or object. The number of these characters must confefeventy thousand. To be perfectly acquainted with them is the bufinels of a whole life ; which must have greatly retarded among them the progress of every

## RISE AND PROGRESS OF

It is evident, that the Chinefe charadters, like hieroglyphics, are figns of things, and not of words. ) For we are told, that the Japaneic, the Tonquince, and the Coreans, who fpeak different languages from each other, and from the inhabitants of China, ufe however the fame written charafters with them, and thus correspond intelligibly with one another in writing, though mutually ignorant of each others' language. Our arithmetiical figures, 1, 2, 3, 4, &c, are an example of this fort of writing. They have no dependence on words ; each figure repredents the number, for which it fands ; and confequently is equally underflood by all nations, who have agreed in the ufe of thefe figures.

The first flep, to remedy the imperfection, the ambiguity, and the tedionfrefs of each of the methods of communication, which have been mentioned, was the invention of figns, which flouid fland not direftly for things, but for the words, by which things were named, and diffinguithed. An alphabet of fyllables forms to have been invented previously to an alphabet of letters. Such a one is fird to be retained at this day in *Diblio*pia and fome countries of India. Eut at befit mult have been imperfect and ineffectual ; fince the number of charafters, being very condictable, mult have rendered both reading and writing very complex and laborious.

To whom we are indebted for the fublime and refined diffeovery of Letters is not determined. They were

## LANGUAGE AND OF WRITING.

braught into Greece by Cadmus the Phenician, who, according to Sir Haac Newton's Chronology, was contemporary with King David. His alphabet contained only fixteen letters. The reft were afterward added, according as figns for proper founds were found to be wanting. The Phenician, Hebrew, Greek, and Roman alphabets agree fo much in the figure, names, and arrangement of the letters, as amounts to demonstration, that they were derived originally from the fame fource.

The antient order of writing was from the right hand to the left. This method, as appears from fome very old inferiptions prevailed even among the Greeks. They afterward ufed to write their lines alternately from the right to the left, and from the left to the right. The infertpion on the famous Sigzan Monument is a fjectimen of this mode of writing, which continued till the days of Solon, the celebrated Legiflator of Athens. At length the motion from the left hand to the right being found more natural and convenient, this order of writing was adopted by all the nations of Europe.

Writing was first exhibited on pillars and tables of flone; afterward on plates of the foster metals. As it became more common, the leaves and bark of certain trees were used in fome countries; and in others tablets of wood, covered with a thin coat of fort was, on which the imprefion was made with a flylus of iron. Parch-

ment, made of the hides of animals, was an invention of later times. Paper was not invented before the fourteenth century.

# STRUCTURE OF LANGUAGE.

THE common division of Speech into eight parts, nauns, pronouns, verbs, participles, adverbs, prepofitions, interjections, and conjunctions, is not very accurate ; fince under the general term of nouns it comprehends both fublicatives and adjectives, which are parts of speech effentially diffindt. Yet, as we are most accuftermed to this divition, and as logical exactneds is not neceffary to our prefent defign ; we shall adopt thefe terms, which habit has made familiar to us.

Subfantive neurs are the foundation of Grammar, and the moft antient part of fpeech. When men had advanced beyond fimple interjections or exclamations of pation, and had begun to communicate their ideas to each other ; they would be obliged to affigm names to objects, by which they were furrounded. Wherever a favage looked, he beheld forefts and trees. To diffinguith each by a feparate name would have been endlefs. Their common qualities ; fuch, as spiringing from a root, and bearing branches and leaves, would fuggeft a general idea and a general name. The genus, tree, was afterward fubdivided into its feveral fpecies of oak, elm, alt, &. appresent the spiringent for sole of the spiringent for spiringent for the spiringent for a spiringent for the spiringent

Still however only general terms were used in speech. For oak, elm, and alh were names of whole claffes of objects, each of which comprehended an immenfe number of undiftinguished individuals. Thus, when the nouns man, lion, or tree, were mentioned in converfation, it could not be known, which man, lion, or tree was meant among the multitude, comprehended under one name. / Hence arole a very ufeful contrivance for determining the individual object intended by mean of that part of speech, called the Article. / In English we have two articles, a and the ; a is more general, the more definite. The Greeks had but one, which agrees with our definite article the. They fupplied the place of our article a by the absence of their article : thus Ardeanes fignifies a man ; ' Ardewros the man. The Latins had no article ; but in the room of it used the pronouns hic. ille, ifte. This however feems a defect in their language ; fince articles certainly contribute much to per-

To preceive the truth of this remark, obferve the difforent imports of the following expredions; " " The fon " of a king, the fon of the king, a fon of the king's." Each of these three phrases has a separate meaning, too obvious to be miunderstood. But in Lain, " filius re-" gis" is entirely undetermined ; it may bear either of the three fenses mentioned.

Befide this quality of being defined by the article

three affections belong to nouns, number, gender and cafe, which deferve to be confidered.

52

NUMBER, as it makes a noun fignificant of one or more, is fingular or plural; a diffunction found in all tongues; which muft have been coeval with the origin of language; fince there were few things, which meahad more frequent necefity of exprefing, than the diftin&tion between one and more. In the Hebrew, Greck, and fome other antient languages, we find not only a plural, but a dual number; the origin of which may very naturally be accounted for, as feparate terms of numbering were yet undiffevered, and one, two, and many were all, or at leaft the principal numeral difficiions, which men at firth had any occafion to make.

GENDER, which is founded on the diffinition of the two fees, can with propriety be applied to the names of living creatures colly. All other nouns cought to be of the neuter gender. Yet in molt languages the fame diffinition is applied to a great number of inanimate objects. Thus in the Latin tongue enfs, a (word, is maculine; fagitat, an arrow, is ferminine ; and this affigmation of fex to inanimate objects often appears enitrely expricious. In the Greek and Latin however all unanimatetobjects are not diffributed into mafculine and ferminine ; but many of them are elsified, where all ought to be, under the neuter gender ; ae/axum, a rock ; arr, the fac. But in the French and Italian tongues

the neuter gender is wholly unknown, all their names of inanimate objects being put upon the fame footing with thole of living creatures, and diffributed without referve into/mafculine and feminine. In the Lingthan language all nouns, literally ufed, that are not names of living creatures, are neuter; and ours is perhaps the only tongue (except the Chinefs, which is faid to refemble it in this particular) in which the diffraction of gender is philofophically applied.

Case denotes the flate or relation, which one object bears to another, by fome variation of the name of that object 7 generally in the final letters, and by fome languages in the initial. All tongues however do not agree in this mode of exprellion. Declenion is ufed by the Greek and Latin ; but whe English, French, and Italian, it is not found a or at moll it exists in a very imperfect flate. Thefe languages expreds the relations of objects by prepositions, which are the names of thofe relations prelized to the names of objects. English nous have no cafe, except a fort of genitive, commonly formed by adding the letter *s* to the noun ; as when we fay " Pope's Dunciad," meaning the Dunciad of Pope.

Whether the moderns have given beauty or utility to language by the abolition of cafes may perhaps be doubted. They have however certainly roadered it more fimple by removing that intricacy, which arole from different forms of declenion, and from the irregu-

F 2

54

larities of the feveral declenfons. But in obtaining this fimplicity, it mult be confelfed, we have filled language with a multitude of thofe little words, called prepoltions; which by perpetually occurring in every fentence encumber speech, and by rendering it more prolix enervate its force. The found of modern language is alfo lefs agreeable to the ear, being deprived of that variety and fweetnefs, which arofe from the length of words, and the change of terminations, occafioned by calls in the Greek and Latin. But perhaps the greateft difadvantage, we fullain by the abolition of cafes, is the lofs of that liberty of transportion in the arrangement of words, which the antient languages enjoyed.

Procours are the repreferatives of nouns, and are fubject to the fame modifications of number, gender, and cafe. We may obferve however, that the pronouns of the firft and fecond perfon, I and thou, have no diffinction of gender in any language; for, as they always refer to perfons prefent, their fex much be known, and therefore needs not to be marked by their pronouns. But, as the third perfon may be abfent, or unknown, the diffinction of gender there becomes requifite; and accordingly in English it hath all the three genders,  $h_{0,2}h_{0,3}h_{0,3}$  it.

ADJECTIVES, as frong, weak, handfome, ugly, are the plaineft and most simple in that class of words, which

are termed attributive. They are common to all languages, and mult have been very early invented i fince objects could neither be diffinguilhed, nor treated of in diffourfe, before names were alligned to their different qualities.

## STRUCTURE OF LANGUAGE.

## ENGLISH TONGUE.

O F all the parts of fpeech VERDS are by far the most complex and ufetul. From their importance we may juftly conclude, that they were coeval with the origin of language ;)though a long time mult have been requisite to rear them up to that accuracy, which they now poffels.

The tenfes were contrived, to mark the feveral diffunctions of time. We commonly think of no more, than its three great divitions, the path, the prefent, and the future ; and we might fuppofe that, if verbs had been fo contrived, as merely to express thefe, no more was neceffary. But language proceeds with much greater fubility. It divides time into its feveral moments; i tregards it, as never flanding fill, but always flowing ; things paft, as more or lefs diffant; and things fluture, as more or lefs remote by different gradations. Hence the variety of tenfes in almost every language.

The prefent may indeed be always regarded, as one indivisible point, which admits no variety ; " I am," " fum." But it is not fo with the past. Even the pooreft language has two or three tenfes, to express its varieties. Ours has four. 1. A past action may be reprefented, as unfinished, by the imperfect tense : " I was " walking, ambulabam." 2. As finished, by the perfect tenfe, " I have walked." 3. As finished fome time fince, the particular time being left undetermined ; " I walked, ambulavi ;" This is what Grammarians call an aorift or indefinite past. 4. As finished before fomething elfe, which is also past. This is the plusquamperfect ; " I had walked, ambulaveram. I had " walked, before you called upon me." Our language, we must perceive with pleasure, has an advantage over the Latin, which has only three variations of past time.

The varieties in future time are two; a fimple or indefinite future, "I finall walk, ambulabe;" and a future having reference to fomething elfe, which is likewife future, "I finall have walked, ambulavero; "I finall have walked, before he wilk pay me a viit.

Befule tendes verbs admit the diffinction of voices, viz, the active and paffive ; as "I love, or I am loved." They admit also the difficution of modes, which are intended to express the perceptions and volitions of the mind under different forms. The indicative mode fimply declares a preposition ; "I write; I have written."

#### ENGLISH TONGUE.

The imperative requires, commands, or threatens; "Write thou; let him write." The fubjunctive exprefiles a proposition under the form of a condition, or as fubordinate to fomething, to which reference is made; "I might write; I could write; I thould write; if the "matter were for." This experiion of the perceptions and volitions of the mind in fo many various forms; together with the diffinition of the three perfons *I*, *Ibnu*, and *bc*; conflictues the conjugation of verbs, which makes to great a part of the Grammar of all languages.

( Conjugation is reckoned most perfect in those languages, which by varying the termination, or the initial fyllable of the verb, expresses the greatest number of important circumstances without the help of auxiliary verbs. In the Oriental tongues verbs have few tenfes ; but their modes are fo contrived, as to express a great variety of circumftances and relations. In the Hebrew they fay in one word, without the aid of an auxiliary, not only, "I taught," but, " I was taught ; I caufed to teach ; I was caufed to teach ; I taught myfelf." The Greek, which is commonly thought to be the most perfect of all languages, is very regular and complete in the modes and tenfes. The Latin, though formed on the fame model, is not fo perfect ; particularly in the paffive voice, which forms most of the tenfes by the aid of the auxiliary " fum." In modern European tongues conjugation is very defective. The two great auxiliary verbs, to have and to be, with those other aux-

# 58 STRUCTURE OF LANGUAGE.

iliaries, which we ufe in English, do, fkall, well, may, and con, prefixed to a participle or to another verb in the infinitive mode, superfield in a great measure the different terminations of modes and tenfes, which formed the antient conjugations.

The other parts of speech, as they admit no variation, will require only a short discussion.

Adverbs are for the moft part an abridged mode of fpeech, exprelling by one word, what might by a circumlocution be refolved into two or more words, belonging to other parts of fpeech. "Here," for inflance, is the fame with "in this place." Hence adverbs feem to be lefs needifary, and of later introduction into (peech, than feveral other claffes of words ; and accordingly moft of them are derived from other words, formerly established in the language.

Perpolitions and conjunctions ferve to express the relations, which things bear to one another, their mutual influence, dependence, and conjoint coherence ; and fo to join words together, as to form intelligible propolitions. Conjunctions are commonly employed for connecting featurence, or members of featurences ; as, and, becaufe, and the like. Prepolitions are used for connecting words, as  $ef_f from, to_p$  &cc. (The beauty and frength of every language depend in a great measure on a proper use of conjunctions, prepolitions, and their relative pronouns,

#### ENGLISH TONGUE.

which ferve the fame purpole of connecting different parts of difcourfe. )

Having thus briefly confidered the Structure of Language in general, we will now enter more particularly into an examination of our own Language.

The English, which was spoken after the Norman Conqueit, and continues to be fpoken now, is a mixture of the antient Saxon and the Norman French together with fuch new and foreign words, as commerce and learning have in a fucceffion of ages gradually introduced.) From the influx of fo many ftreams, from a junction of fo many diffimilar parts, it naturally follows, that the English, like every compounded language, must be fomewhat irregular. We cannot expect from found in those fimpler languages, which were formed our fyntax is fhort, fince there are few marks in the words themfelves, which fhow their relation to each othment in a fentence. But, if thefe be difadvantages in a tages, which attend it ; particularly by the number and variety of words, by which fuch a language is commonthe English. In all grave fubjects especially, historical, critical, political, and moral, no complaint can juffly be

## STRUCTURE OF LANGUAGE.

made of the barrennels of our tongue. We are rich too in the language of poetry; our poetical flyle differs widely from profe, not with refpect to numbers only, but in the very words themfelves; which proves, what a compar's and variety of words we can feleft and employ, fuited to different occafions. Herein we are infinitely fuperior to the French, whole poetical language, if it were not differ from their ordinary profe. Their language however furpafies ours in exprefing, whatever is delicate, gay, and amufing. It is perhaps the happieft language for converfation in the known world; but for the higher fulpefies of composition the English is juftly confidered, as far fuperior to it.

The flexibility of a language, or its power of becoming either grave and ftrong, or eafy and flowing, or tender and gende, or pompous and magnificent, as occafions require, is a quality of great importance in fpeaking and writing.) This depends on the copionfueds of a language ; the different arrangements, of which its words are fulceptible ; and the variety and beauty of the founds of its words. The Greek poffeffed thefe requifites in a higher degree, than any other language. If fuperadded the graceful variety of its different dialects ; and thereby readily affumed every kind of character, an author could with, from the moft fimple and familiar to the moft majeffic. The Latin, though very beautiful, is inferior in this refpect to the Greek. 'fe

#### ENGLISH TONGUE.

has none of a fixed character of flatelines and gravity ; and is fupported by a certain fenatorial dignity, of which it is difficult for a writer to divet it. Among modern tongues the Italian poffeffes much more flexibility, than the French ; and feems to be on the whole the moft perfset of all the modern dialects, which have arisen out of the ruins of the antient. Our languages, though unequal to the Italian in flexibility, is not deftique of a confiderable degree of this quality. Whoever confiders the diverfity of flyle in iome of our beft writers, will diffeore in our tongue fuch a circle of exprefilon, fuch a power of accommodation to the various tatles of men, as redounds much to its honor.

Our language has been thought to be very deficient in harmony of found ; yet the melody of its verification, its power of fupporting postient numbers without the affidance of rhyme, is a fufficient proof, that it is far from being unharmonious. ] Even the hifting found, of which it has been accurded, obtains lefs frequently, than has been fuffpeffed. For in many words, and in the final fyllables efpecially, the letter a has the found of z, which is one of the founds, on which the car refls with pleafure ; as in *han*, *lufe*, *hears*, *hears*, *hears*.

It must however be admitted, that fmoothnefs is not the diffinguifhing property of the English tongue. Strength and exprefivenefs rather, than grace and melody, conditute its character. It poffedes allo the

## STRUCTURE OF LANGUAGE.

property of being the most fimple of all the European dialefts in its form and confiruction. It is free from the intricacy of cafes, declenfions, modes, and tenfes. Its words are fubject to fewer variations from their original form. than those of any other language. Its nouns have no diffinction of gender, except what is made by nature ; and but one variation in cafe. Its adjectives admit no change, except what expresses the degree of comparison. Its verbs inftead of the varieties of antient conjugation admit only four or five changes in termination. A few prepositions and auxiliary verbs effect all the purposes of fignificancy ; while the principal words for the most part preferve their form unaltered. Hence our language acquires a fimplicity and facility, which are the caufe of its being frequently written and fpoken with inaccuracy. We imagine that a competent fkill in it may be acquired without any fludy ; and that in a fyntax fo narrow and limited, as ours, there is nothing, which requires attention. But the fundamental rules of fyntax are common to the English and to the antient tongues; and regard to them is abfolutely requifite for writing or fpeaking with propriety.

Whatever be the advantages or defects of our language, it certainly deferves in the higheft degree our fludy and attention. The Greeks and Romans in the meridian of their glory beflowed the higheft cultivation on their respective languages. The French and Ital-

#### ENGLISH TONGUE.

ians have employed much fludy upon theirs ; and their example is worthy of imitation. For, whatever knowledge may be gained by the fludy of other languages, it can never be communicated with advantage, unlefs by those, who can write and speak their own language with propriety. Let the matter of an author be ever for good and ufeful, his compositions will always fuffer in the public efteem, if his expression be deficient in purity or propriety. At the fame time the attainment of a correct and elegant ftyle is an object, which demands application and labor. If any one fuppofe he can catch it merely by the ear, or acquire it by a hafty perufal of fome of our good authors, he will be much difappointed. (The many grammatical errors, the many impure expressions, which are found in authors, who are far from being contemptible, demonstrate that a careful . ftudy of our language is previoufly requilite for writing it with propriety, purity, and elegance.

STYLE, PERSPICUITY, AND PRECISION. STYLE is the peculiar manner, in which a man expredict his thoughts by words. It is a picture of the ideas in his mind, and of the order, in which they there exit.

The qualities of a good ftyle may be ranged under two heads, perfpicuity and ornament. It will readily be admitted, that perfoiculty is the fundamental quality of a good ltyle. Without this the brighteft ormaments only glimmer through the dark; and perplex inflead of pleafing the reader. If we be forced to foilow a writer with much care; to paufe, and to read over his fentences a feeond time, in order to underfland them fully; he will not pleafe us long. Men are too indelent to relifh fo much labor. Though they may pretend to admire an author's depth, after they have diffeovered his meaning; they will feldom be inclined to look a feeond time into his book.

Perfpiculty requires attention firft to fingle words and phrafes, and then to the confirution of fentences. When confidered with refpect to words and phrafes, it requires thefe three qualities, *purity, propriety, and predifon*.

Purity and propriety of language are often ufed indiferininately for each other; and indeed they are very nearly allied. A diffunction however obtains between them. Purity is the ufe of fuch words and confirudions, as belong to the idiom of a particular language, in oppofitien to words and phrafes, which are imported from other languages, or which are obfolte, or newly coined, or employed without proper authority. Proprity is the choice of fuch words, as the beft and moft eftabilited ufage has appropriated to thefe ideas, which we intend to express by them.) It implies a correct and happy application of them in oppofition to vulgeu or low exprefibons, and to words and phrafes, lefs fignificant of the ideas, we intend to convey. Style may be pure, that is it may be firldly Englith without Scotticifins or Gallicifins, or ungrammatical exprefibors of any kind, and yet be deficient in propriety. The words may be illy felefed ; not adapted to the fubjed?, nor fully exprefibe of the author's meaning. He took them indeed from the general mass of Englith words; but his choice was made without fkill. But fkyle cannot be proper without being pure ; it is the union of purity and propriety, which renders it graceful and perfigurous.

The exact meaning of precifion'smay be learnt from the etymology of the word. It is derived from "pre-"ciders," to cut off; and [fignifies retrenching all fuperfluities, and pruning the exprefition in fuch manner, as to exhibit neither more, nor lefs, than the ideas, intended to be conveyed.

Words, employed to express ideas, may be faulty in three refpects. They may either not express the ideas, which the author means, but fome others, which are only related ; or they may express them together with fomething more, than he intends. Precifion is opposed to these three faults; but particularly to the lattly into which feeble writers are very apt to fall. They employ a multitude of words, to make themfeves underflood, as they think, more difficulty; but they only confound the

G 2

### STYLE, PERSPICUITY

66

reader. The image, as they place it before you, is always feen double. When an author tells us of his hero's courage in the day of battle; the experillion is precife, and we underftand it fully. But, if from a defire of multiplying words he praife his courage and *forticale*; at the moment, he joins thefe words together, our idea begins to waver. He intends to expred on quality more ftrongly; but he is in fact expreding two. Courage refitls danger; *fortitude* fupports pain. The occafions of exerting thefe qualities are different; and, being led to think of both together, when only one of them fhould engage attention, our view is rendered unflea-ly, and our conception of the object indiling.

The great fource of a loofe ftyle, the oppofite of precifion, is the injudicious une of words, called fynonymous. Scarcely in any language are there two words, that convey precifiely the fame idea ; and a perfon, perfeelly acquainted with the propriety of the language, will always be able to obferve fomething, by which they are diffinguithed. In our language many inflances may be given of difference in meaning among words, reputed fynonymous ; and, as the fubject is important, we flual point out a few of them.

Surprifed, affonified, amound, confounded. We are furprifed at what is new or unexpected ; we are affonified at what is vali or great; we are annazed at what is incomprehensible; we are confounded by what is flocking or trivible.

### AND PRECISION.

Pride, vanity. Pride makes us effeem ourfelves ; vanity makes us defire the effeem of others.

Haughtinefs, difdain. Haughtinefs is founded on a high opinion of ourfelves; difdain on a low opinion of others.

To weary, to fatigue. Continuance of the fame thing wearies us; labor fatigues us. A man is wearied by flanding; he is fatigued by walking.

To abhor, to deteft. To abhor imports fimply flrong dillike; to deteft imports likewife flrong dilapprobation. We abhor being in debt; we deteft treachery.

To invent, to different. We invent things, which are new; we different was hidden. Galiko invented the telefoope; Harvey different different in the blood.

Entire, complete. A thing is entire, when it wants none of its parts; complete, when it wants none of the appendages, which belong to it. A man may occupy an entire houle; though he have notone complete apartment.

Enough, Jufficient. Enough relates to the quantity, which we with to have of a thing. Sufficient relates to the ufe, that is to be made of it. Hence enough commonly fignifies a greater quantity, than fufficient does. The covetous man never has enough; though he has, what is fufficient for nature. Thefe are a few among many inflances of words in our language, which by carelefs writers are apt to be miltaken for fynonymous. The more the diflingtion in the meaning of fuch words is regarded, the more accurately and forcibly fhall we fpeak and write.

## STRUCTURE OF SENTENCES.

A Proper conflruction of fentences is of fuch importance in every fpecies of composition, that we cannot be too firid or minute in our attention to it. For, whatever be the fubjed, if the fentences be conflructed in a clumfy, perplexed, or feeble manner ; the work cannot be read with pleafure, nor even with profit. But by attention to the rules, which relate to this part of flyle, we acquire the habit of exprelling ourfelves with perficuity and elegance ; and, if a diforder happen to arife in fome of our fentences, we immediately fee where it lies, and are able to restify it.

The properties most effential to a perfect fontence are the four following. 1. Clearnefs. 2. Unity, 3. Strength. 4. Harmony.

Ambiguity is oppofed to clearnefs, and arifes from two catfies; either from a wrong choice of words, or a wrong collocation of them. Of the choice of words as its, as regards perfoiculty, we have already fpoken. Of

the collocation of them we are now to treat. From the nature of our Intguage a capital rule in the arrangement of our fentences is, that words or members, moit nearly related, flouid be placed as near to each other, as pofible, that their mutual relation may clearly appear. This rule is frequently neglected even by good writes. A few inflances will flow both its importance and application.

In the polition of adverbs, which are used to qualify the fignification of fomething, which either precedes or follows them, a good deal of nicety is to be observed. " By greatnefs," fays Addifon, " I do not only mean " the bulk of any fingle object, but the largeness of a " whole view." Here the place of the adverb only makes it limit the verb mean. " I do not only mean." The queftion may then be afked, What does he more than mean ? Had it been placed after bulk, ftill it would have been wrong, for it might then be afked, What is meant belide the bulk ? Is it the color, or any other property ? Its proper place is after the word object : " By " greatnefs I do not mean the bulk of any fingle object " only ;" for then, when it is afked, What does he mean more, than the bulk of a fingle object ; the answer comes out precifely, as the author intends, " the large-" nefs of a whole view," "Theifm," fays Lord Shaftsbury, " can only be opposed to polytheisim or athe-"ifm." It may be afked then, is theifm capable of no-

thing elfc, except being *appled* to polytheim or atheifm? This is what the words literally mean through the improper collocation of *anj*. He ought to have faid, " Theifm can be oppofed only to polytheifm or " atheifm." Inaccuracies of this kind occafion little ambiguity in common difcourfe, becaute the tone and emphafis, ufed by the fpeaker, generally make the meaning perfpicuous. But in writing, where a perfon fpeaks to the eye, he ought to be more accurate; and fo to connect adverbs with the words, they qualify, that his meaning cannot be miltaken on the first infpection.

When a circumflance is interpoled in the middle of afentence, it fometimes requires attention, to place it in fuch manner, as to dived it of all ambiguity.) For inflance, "Are thefe defigns," fays Lord Bolingbroke, " which any man, who is born a Briton, in any circum-" fraid to avow ?" Here we are in doubt, whether the phrafes, " in any circumflance, in any fituation," be contected with " a man born in Britain ?" or with that man's " avowigg his defigns." If the latter, as feems moft likely, was intended to be the meaning ; the arrangement ought to be this, "Are thefe defigns, which "any man, who is born a Briton, ought to be afhamed " or afrid in any circumflances, in any fituation, to " ayow, ?"

Still more attention is requilite to a proper dif polition of the relative pronouns, who, which, what, whole ; and of all those particles, which express the connection of the parts of speech. As all reasoning depends upon this connection, we cannot be too accurate with regard to it. A fmall error may obfcure the meaning of a whole fentence ; and even where the meaning is apparent, yet if thefe relatives be mifplaced ; we always find fomething awkward and disjointed in the ftructure of the period. The following paffage in Billiop Sherlock's Sermons will exemplify these observations; " It is folly to pretend to arm ourfelves against the ac-" cidents of life, by heaping up treafures, which nothing " can protest us againft, but the good providence of our " Heavenly Father." Which grammatically refers to the immediately preceding noun, which here is "treafures ;" and this would convert the whole period into nonfenfe. The fentence fhould have been thus confiructed ; " It is " folly to pretend by heaping up treafures to arm our-" felves against the accidents of life, against which " nothing can protect us, but the good providence of our

We now proceed to the fecond quality of a well arranged fenence, which we termed its Unity. This is a capital property. The very nature of a fenence implies one proposition to be expressed. It may confid of parts , but these parts much be fo clotly bound togeth-

er, as to make an imprefiion of one object only upon the mind.

To preferve this unity, we muß firft obferve, that during the courfe of the fentence the fubject fhould be changed as little, as poffile.] There is generally in every fentence fome perfon or thing, which is the governing word. This fhould be continued fo, if poffible, from the beginning to the end of it. Should a man exprefs himfelf in this mannet; " After we came to anchor, " they put me on flore, where I was faluted by all my "friends, who received me with the greateft kindnefs." Though the objects in this fentence are fufficiently connected ; yet by fhifting fo often the fubject and perfon, as, they, I, and wood, they appear in fo difunited a view, that the fenfe and coancefion are nearly loft. The fentence is reflored to its proper unity by confituding it thus; " Having come to anchor, I was put on fhore, " where I was faluted by all my friends, who received " me with the greateft kindnefs."

The fecond rule is, never crowd into one fentence ideas, which have fo little connection, that they might well be divided into two or more fentences. ) Violation of this rule never fails to difpleafe a reader. Its effect indeed is fo difgulling, that of the two it is the fafeft extreme, to crr rather by too many fhort fentences, that by one, that is overloaded and confufed. The following fentence from a tranlation of Plutarch will juicity

this opinion ; " Their march," fays the author, fpeaking of the Greeks, "was through an uncultivated coun-"try, whole favage inhabitants fared hardly, having no " other riches, than a breed of lean fheep, whole fielh " was rank and unfavory by reafon of their continual "feeding upon fea-fih." Here the fuliplet is repeatedly changed. The march of the Greeks, the defiription of the inhabitants, through whole country they paffed, the account of their fheep, and the reafon of their fheep being difagreeable food, make a jumble of objects, flightly related to each other, which the reader cannot without confiderable difficulty comprehend in one view.

The third rule for preferving the unity of a fentence is, keep clear of parenthefes in the middle of it. Thefe may on fome occations have a fiyitted appearance, as prompted by a certain vivacity of thought, which can glance happily afide, as it is going along. But in general their effect is extremely bad; being a perplexed method of dipofing of fome thought, which a writer has not art enough to introduce in its proper place. It is needlefs to produce any inflances, as they occur fo frequently among incorrect writers.

The fourth rule for the unity of a featence is, bring it to a full and perfect clofe. It needs not to be obferved, that an unfinihed featence is no featence with refped to grammar. But featences often occur, which are more, than finished. When we have arrived at

н

74

what we expected to be the conclusion ; when we are come to the word, on which the mind is naturally led to reft ; unexpectedly fome circumftance is added, which ought to have been omitted, or difposed of elfewhere. Thus, for inflance, in the following fentence from Sir William Temple the adjection to the fentence is entirely foreign to it. Speaking of Burnet's Theory of the Earth, and Fontenelle's Plurality of Worlds ; " The " first," fays he, " could not end his learned treatife " without a panegyric of modern learning in compari-" fon of the antient ; and the other falls fo grofsly into " the cenfure of the old poetry and preference of the " new, that I could not read either of thefe ftrains with-" out fome indignation ; which no quality among men " is fo apt to raife in me, as felf fufficiency." The word " indignation" concludes the fentence ; for the last member is added after the proper close.

# STRUCTURE OF SENTENCES.

W E now proceed to the third quality of a correct featence, which we termed Strength. By this is meant fuch a difpolition of the feveral words and members, as will exhibit the fanfe to the beft advantage ; as will render the imprefion, which the period is intended to make, moft fail and complete ; and give every word and erery member its due weight and force. To the production of this effect perfpiculty and unity are abfolutely neceflary; but more is requilite. For a featence may be clear; it may also be compady, or have the requilite unity; and yet by fome unfavorable circumflance in the flrndture it may fail in that flrength or livelinefs of impreflion, which a more happy collocation would produce.

The first rule for promoting the Arength of a fer." tence is, take from it all redundant words. / Whatever can be calify fupplied in the mind, is better conitted in the expression Thus, " Content with deferving a tri-"umph, he refuided the honor of it," is better than " Being content with deferving a triumph, he refuided " the honor of it." It is one of the most ufeful excrciles on reviewing, what we have written, to contrast that circuitous mode of expression, and to cut off thois utlebs excretences, which are ufually found in a first draught. But we mult be cautious of pruning fo clofely, as to give a hardness and dryness to the first. Some leaves mult be left to fielter and adorn the fruit.

As fentences fhould be cleared of fuperfluous words, fo allo of fuperfluous members. • Oppofed to this is the fault, we frequently meet, the laft member of a period being only a repetition of the former in a different drefs. For example, fpeaking of beauty, " The very firth diff-" covery of it," fays Addifon, " firthes the mind with " inward joy, and fpreads delight through all its facel-

" ties." In this inflance fearcely any thing is added by the fecond member of the fentence to what was expreffed in the first. Though the flowing flyle of Addition may palliate fuch negligence ; yet it is generally true, that language, divested of this prolixity, is more strong and beautiful.

The fecond rule for promoting the ftrength of a fentreace is, pay particular attention to the ufe of copulatives, relatives, and particles, employed for transfition and connection. Some obfervations on this fubjed, which appear ufeful, fhall be mentioned.

What is termed fplitting offparticles, or feparating a preportion from the neun, which it governs, is ever to be avoided. For example, "Though virtue borrows "no affiftance from, yet it may often be accompanied " by, the advantages of fortune." In fuch inflances we fuffer pain from the violent feparation of two things, which by nature are clockly united.

The fitrength of a featence is much injured by an unneceffary multiplication of relative and demonstrative particles. If a writer fay, " there is nothing, which " dignafis me fooner, than the empty pomp of lan-" guage 3" he expresses that the empty pomp of land, " Nothing dignafis me fooner, than the emp-" ty pomp of language." The former mode of expresfion in the introduction of a fubject, or in laying down

a proposition, to which particular attention is demanded, is very proper; but in ordinary discourse the latter is far preferable.

With regard to the relative we fhall only obferve, that in convertation and epitfolary writing it may be omitted; but in compositions of a ferious or dignified kind it should confuntly be inferted.

On the copulative particle and, which occurs fo often, feveral observations are to be made. It is evident, that an unneceffary repetition of it enfeebles flyle. By omitting it we often make a clofer connection, a quicker fucceffion of objects, than when it is inferted between them. " Veni, vidi, vici," expresses with more spirit the rapidity of conqueft, than if connecting particles had been ufed. When, however, we wilh to prevent a quick transition from one object to another ; and when enumerating objects, which we wilh to appear as diffinct from each other, as poffible ; copulatives may be multiplied with peculiar advantage. Thus Lord Bolingbroke fays with propriety, " Such a man might fall a victim " to power ; but truth, and reafon, and liberty, would " fall with him."

The third rule for promoting the ftrength of a fentence is, dipofe of the principal word or words in that part of, the fentence, where they will make the moft firking imprefilon. | Perfpicativy ought firft to be ftudied ; and

the nature of our language allows no great liberty of collocation. In general the important words are placed at the beginning of a fentence. Thus Mr. Additon ; " The pleafures of the imagination, taken in their full " extent, are not fo groß, as thofe of fenfe ; nor fo re-" fined, as thofe of the underflanding." This order feems to be the moft plain and natural. Sometimes however, when we propole giving weight to a fentence, it is ufeful to fufpend the meaning a little, and then to bring it out fully at the clofe. " Thus," fays Pope, " on whatever fide we contemplate Homer, what prin-" cipally finites us, is his wonderful invention."

The fourth rule for promoting the firength of featences is, make the members of them go on rifing in their importance one above another. This kind of arrangement is called a climax, and is ever regarded, as a beauty in composition. Why it pleafes is fufficiently evident. In all things we love to advance to what is more and more beautiful rather, than to follow a retrograde order. Having viewed fome confiderable object, we cannot without pain defeend to an inferior circumfance. "*Covendum fill*," fays Quintilian, "a dearylat "oratio, al forcing falignature and adjudi infimium." A weaker affertion fhould never follow a thronger one; and, when a fentence confits of two members, the longefi fhould in general be the concluding one. Periods, thus divided, are pronounced, more early ; and, the floorief

member being placed firft, we carry it more readily in our memory, as we proceed to the facond, and fee the connection of the two more clearly. Thus to fay, "When our pations have forfaken us, we flatter our-"felves with the belief that we have forfaken them," is both more graceful and more perfpicuous, than to begin with the longeft part of the proposition ; "We flat-" ter ourfelves with the belief that we have forfaken our " patilons, when they have forfaken us."

The fifth rule for conftructing featences with frrength is, avoid concluding them with an adverb, a preportion, or any infignificant word. By fuch conclutions flyle is always weakened and degraded. Sometimes indeed, where the firefs and fignificancy reft chiefly upon words of this kind, they ought to have the principal place allotted them. No fault, for example, can be found with this featence of Bolingbroke ; " In their profpericy my "friends thall never hear of me ; in their adverfity al-"ways ;" where never and always, being emphatical words, are to placed, as to make a fitrog imprefition. But, when thefe inferior parts of fpeech are introduced, as circumflances, or as qualifications of more important words ; they fhould always be difported of in the leaft configueous parts of the period.

We fould always avoid concluding a fentence or member with any of those particles, which diffinguish the cafes of nouns; as of, to, from, with, by. Thus it is

much better to fay, "Avarice is a crime, of which wife "men are often guilty," than to fay, "Avarice is a "crime, which wife men are often guilty of." This is a phrafelogy, which all correct writers flun.

A complex verb, compounded of a fimple verb and a fublequent preposition, is also an ungraceful conclusion of a period ; as bring about, clear up, give over, and many others of the fame kind ; inftead of which, if a fimple verb be employed, it will terminate the fentence with more ftrength. Even the pronoun it, efpecially when joined with fome of the prepolitions, as with it, in it, to it, cannot without violation of grace be the conclusion of a fentence. Any phrafe, which expresses a circumstance only, cannot conclude a fentence without great inelegance. Circumstances indeed are like unshapely stones in a building, which try the skill of an artist, where to place them with the least offence. We should not crowd too many of them together; but rather intersperse them in different parts of the fentence, joined with the principal words, on which they depend. Thus, for inftance, when Dean Swift fays, "What I had the hon-" or of mentioning to your Lordship fometime ago in " conversation, was not a new thought ;" these two circumftances, fometime ago and in conversation, which are joined, would have been better feparated thus; "What I had the honor fome time ago of mentioning " to your Lordship in conversation."

The fixth and last rule concerning the strength of a fentence is this, in the members of it, where two things are compared or contrasted ; where either refemblance or opposition is to be expressed ; fome refemblance in the language and conftruction ought to be obferved. The following paffage from Pope's preface to his Homer beautifully exemplifies this rule. " Homer was " the greater genius ; Virgil the better artift ; in the " one we admire the man; in the other the work. " Homer hurries us with a commanding impetuofity ; " Virgil leads us with an attractive majefty. Homer " fcatters with a generous profusion ; Virgil bestows " with a careful magnificence. Homer, like the Nile, " pours out his riches with a fudden overflow ; Virgil, " like a river in its banks, with a conftant ftream. "When we look upon their machines, Homer feenis " like his own Jupiter in his terrors, fhaking Olympus, " fcattering lightnings, and firing the heavens. Vir-" gil like the fame power in his benevolence, counfel-" ling with the Gods, laying plans for empires, and or-" dering his whole creation." Periods, thus conftructed, when introduced with propriety, and not too frequently repeated, have a fenfible beauty. But, if fuch a conftruction be aimed at in every fentence ; it betrays into a difagreeable uniformity, and produces a regular jingle in the period, which tires the ear, and plainly difcovers affectation.

## HARMONY.

HAVING confidered featences with regard to their meaning under the heads of Perfpicuity, Unity, and Strength; we fhall now confider them with refpect to their found.

In the harmony of periods two things are to be confidered. First agreeable found or modulation in general without any particular expression. Next the found fo ordered, as to become expressive of the fense. The first is the more common; the fecond the fuperior beauty.

The beauty of mufical confurction depends upon the choice and arrangement of words. Those words are most pleafing to the ear, which are composed of funcout and liquid founds, in which there is a proper intermixture of vowels and confonants without too many harfh confonants, or too many open vowels in fuccellion. Long words are generally more pleafing to the ear, than monofyllables; and thole are the most mufical, which are not wholly composed of long or thort fyliables, but of an intermixture of them; fuch, as delight, aumfs, subsciption, beautiful, imperausfiy. If the words, however, which compose a fentence, be ever fo well choden and harmonious; yet, if they be unfkilfully are: ranged, its mufic is entirely loft. As an inflance of a mufical fentence, we may take the following from Milton; " We fhall conduct you to a hill fide, laborious " indeed at the first accent; but elfe fo fmooth, fo " green, fo full of goodly profpeds and melodious " founds on every fide, that the harp of Orpheus was " not more charming." Every thing in this fentence confpires to render it harmonious. The words are well chofen; *laborious, fmooth, green, goolly, mulcifeus, charming* ; and fo happily arranged, that no alteration can be made without injuring the melody.

There are two things, on which the mufic of a fentence principally depends; thefe are the proper diltribution of the feveral members of it, and the clofe or cadence of the whole.

Firth, the diffribution of the feveral members flould be carefully regarded. Whatever is eafy to the organs of fpeech, is always grateful to the ear. While a period advances, the termination of each member forms a paufe in the pronunciation; and thefe paufes flould be fo diffributed, as to bear a certain mufical proportion to each other. This will be befi illuftrated by examples. "This diffcourfe concerning the "eadness of God's commands does all along fuppofs." and acknowledge the difficulties of the first entrance "upon a religious courfe; except only in thefe perfons "who have bad the happings to be trained up to re-

" ligion by the eafy and infenfible degrees of a pious " and virtuous education." This fentence is far from being harmonious; owing chiefly to this, that there is but one paufe in it, by which it is divided into two members ; each of which is fo long, as to require a confiderable firetch of breath in pronouncing it. On the contrary let us observe the grace of the following passage from Sir William Temple, in which he fpeaks farcaltically of man. " But, God be thanked, his " pride is greater, than his ignorance ; and, what " he wants in knowledge, he fupplies by fufficien-" cy. When he has looked about him as far, as " he can, he concludes there is no more to be feen ; " when he is at the end of his line, he is at the bottom " of the ocean ; when he has fhot his beft, he is fure " none ever did, or ever can fhoot better, or beyond it. " His own reafon he holds to be the certain meafure of " truth ; and his own knowledge of what is poffible in " nature." Here every thing is at once eafy to the breath, and grateful to the ear. We must however obferve that, if composition abound with fentences, which have too many refts, and thefe placed at intervals apparently meafured and regular, it is apt to favor of affedation.

The next thing, which demands attention, is the clofs or cadence of the period. The only important rule, which can here be given, is this, when we aim at dignity or elevation, the found flould increase to the LaB ;

#### HARMONY.

the longest members of the period, and the fulleft and most fonorous words fhould be referved for the conclusion. As an inflance of this, the following fentence of Addition may be given. "It fills the mind with the "largeft variety of ideas 1 convertes with its tobjed's at "the greateft diffance 5 and continues the longeft in "adion without being tired or fatiated with its prop-"er enjoyments." Here every reader mult be fentible of beauty in the juft difficulturion of the paufes, and in the manner of rounding the period, and of bringing it to a full and harmonious clofe.

It may be remarked, that[litle words in the conclufion of a featence are as injurious to melody, as they are inconfiftent with firength of expression. A nutified clofe in our language feats is general to require either the laft fyllable, or the laft but one, to be a long fyllable.) Words, which confift chiefly of thort fyllables, an *castrary, particular, retrofped*, foldom terminate a featence harmonioully, unlefs a previous run of long fyllables have rendered them pleafing to the ear.

—Sentences however, which are fo conftruited, as to make the found always fivell toward the end, and reft either on the lait or penult (yilable, give a diffeourfe the tone of declamation. If melody be not varied, the car is foon cloyed with it., Sentences conftruited in the fame manner, with the panfes at equal intervals, fhould never fucceed each other. Short featences mult bue

blended with long and fwelling ones, to render difcourfe fprightly as well, as magnificent.

We now proceed to treat of a higher fpecies of harmony ; the found adapted to the fenfe. Of this we may remark two degrees. First the current of found fuited to the tenor of a difcourfe. Next a peculiar refemblance effected between fome object and the founds, that are employed in deforbing it. )

Sounds have in many refpects an intimate correfpondence with our ideas ; partly satural, partly produced by artificial affociations. Hence any one modulation of found, continued, famps on flyle a certain character and expredion. Sentences, conftructed with Ciccromian fulnefs, excite an idea of what is important, magnificent, and fedate. But they fuit no violent paffoon, no eager reafoning, no familiar addrefs. Thefe require menfures brilker, eatier, and often more abrupt. It were as abfurd to write a panegrie and an invective in a flyle of the fame cadence, as to fet the words of a tonder love fong to the tune of a warlike march.

Belide the general correspondence of the current of found with the current of thought a more particular exprelion of certain objects by refembling (auds may be attempted. In poetry this refemblance is chiefly to be fought. It obtains fometimes indeed in profe compefition, i but there in an inferior degree.

### HARMONY.

The founds of words may be employed for reprefenting chiefly three claffes of objects; first other founds; fecondly motions; and thirdly the emotions and pacfons of the mind.)

(In mole languages the names of many particular founds are to formed, as to bear fome relemblance of the found, which they fignify s) as with us the *abifiling* of winds, the *burse* and *hum* of infects, the *hift* of ferpents, and the *crafk* of falling timber 1 and many other inflances, where the name is plainly adapted to the found, it repretents. A remarkable example of this beauty may be taken from two paffages in Milton's Paradité Loft ; in one of which he deferibes the found, made by the opening of the gates of hell ; in the other, that made by the opening of the gates of heaven. The contraft between the two exhibits to great advantage the art of the poet. The first is the opening of hell's gates 1

--------On a fudden open fly With impetuous recoil and jarring found The infernal doors ; and on their hinges grate Harfh thunder.------

Obferve the fmoothnefs of the other ;

Heaven opened wide Her ever during gates, harmonious found ! On golden hinges turning.

In the fecond place the found of words is frequently employed to imitate motion ; as it is fwift 88

or flow, violent or gentle, uniform or interrupted, eafy or accompanied with effort. ) Between found and proton there is no natural afinity ; yet in the imagimation there is a firong one ; as is evident from the connection between mufic and dancing. The poet can therefore give us a lively idea of the kind of motion, he would deferibe, by the help of founds, which in our imagination correspond with that motion. / Long fylhables naturally excite an idea of flow motion shas in this line of Virgil,

Olli inter fefe magna vi brachia tollunt.

A fucceffion of fhort fyllables gives the imprefiion of quick motion ; as,

Sed fugit interea, fugit irreparabile tempus.

The works of Homer and Virgil abound with inflances of this beauty; which are fo often quoted, and fo well known, that it is unneceffary to produce them.

The third fet of objects, which the found of words is capable of reprefenting, confils of emotions and paffions of the mind. Between fenfe and found there appears to be no natural refemblance. But, if the arcangement of fyllables by their found alone recall one fet of ideas more readily, than another ; and dipofe the mind for entering into that affection, which the poet intends to mike ; fuch arrangement may with propriety (: fuid to refemble the fenfe. Thus, when pleafure.jey) and agreeable objects are definited by one, who feels his fubject; the language naturally runs in fmooth, liquid, and flowing numbers. )-

/ Brifk and lively fenfations exact quicker and more animated numbers. / .

Juvenum manus emicat ardens Littus in Hefperium.

Melancholy and gloomy fubjects are naturally connected with flow measures and long words.

In those deep folitudes and awful cells, Where heavenly pensive contemplation dwells.

Abundant inftances of this kind are fuggefted by a moderate acquaintance with good poets, either antient or modern.

## ORIGIN AND NATURE OF FIGURATIVE LANGUAGE.

I IGURES may be definited to be that language, which is prompted either by the imagination or paffions. They are commonly divided by rhetoricians into two great claffes, figures of words, and figures of thought.

## ORIGIN AND NATURE OF

The former are commonly called tropcs, and confift in a word's being used to fignify fomething different from its original meaning. | Hence, if the word be changed, the figure is deftroyed. Thus, for inftance, " Light " arifeth to the upright in darkness." Here the trope confifts in " light and darknefs" not being taken literally, but fubfituted for comfort and adverfity : to which conditions of life they are fuppofed to bear fome refemblance. [ The other class, termed figures of thought, fuppofes the figure to confift in the fentiment only. while the words are used in their literal fense ;) as in exclamations, interrogations, apoftrophes, and comparifons ; where, though the words be varied, or tranflated from one language into another, the fame figure is still This diffinction however is of imall impreferved. portance ; as practice cannot be affifted by it ; nor is it always very perfpicuous.

(Tropes are derived in part from the barrennefs of larguage; but principally from the influence, which the imagination has over all language.) The imagination never contemplates any one idea or object, as fingle and alone; but as accompanied by others, which may be confidered, as its accellories. Thefe accellories often operate more forcibly upon the mind, than the principal idea itelf. They are perhaps in their nature more agreeable; or more familiar to our conceptions; or remind us of a greater variety of important circuits.

## FIGURATIVE LANGUAGE.

frances. Hence the name of the accelfory or correfpondent idea is fublituted; although the principal has a proper and well known name of its own. Thus, for example, when we defign to point out the period, in which a flate enjoyed most reputation or glory, we might eafily employ the proper words for expreding this; but, as this in our imagination is recally connected with the flourishing period of a plant or tree, we prefer this correlpondent idea, and fay, "The Roman " Empire flourished most under Augustus." The leader of a faction is a plain expreditor; but, becaute the head is the principal part of the human body, and is fuppofed to direct all the animal operations; refing on this refermblance, we fay, " Catiline was the head of " his pary."

We fhall now examine, why tropes and figures contribute to the beauty and grace of hyle. (By them language is enriched, and made more copious.) Hence words and phrafes are multiplied for caprefling all forts of ideas; for deferibing even the fmalleft differences; the niceft fhades and colors of thought; s which by proper words alone cannot poffibly be exprefied. (They alio give dignity to ftyle, which is degraded by the familiarity of common words.) Figures have the fame effeed on language, that a rich and fplendid apparel has on a perfon of rank and dignity. In profe compolitions affifiance of this kind is often requirite ; to poet-

### ORIGIN AND NATURE OF

ry it is effential. To fay, "the fun rifes," is commonand trite; but it becomes a magnificent image, as expressed by Thompson;

But yonder comes the powerful king of day Rejoicing in the caft.

03

/ Figures furnifh the pleafure of enjoying two objects, prefented at the fame time to our view, without confufion; the principal idea together with its acceffory, which gives it the figurative appearance. When, for example, inflead of "youth," we fay, "the morning of "life;" the fancy is inflandy entertained with all the corresponding circumflances between thefe two objects. At the fame inflant we behold a certain period of human life and a certain time of the day fo connected, that the imagination plays between them with delight, and views at oace two fimilar objects without embarrafilment.

( Figures are also attended with the hadditional advantage of giving us a more clear and firiking view of the principal object, than if it were expredied in fingule terms, and freed from it acceffory idea.) They exhibit the object, on which they are employed, in a picturefuge form ; they render an abfrach/conception in fome degree an object of femê; they furround it with circumfances, which enable the mind to lay hold of it fleadie ly; and to contemplate it fully. By a well adapted figure Serve conviction is affilied, and a truth is imprefield up.

# FIGURATIVE LANGUAGE.

on the mind with additional liveliness and force. Thus in the following pullage of Dr. Young; "When we "dip too deep in pleafure, we always flir a fediment, "that renders it impure and noxious." When an image preferst fuch a refermblance between a moral and a feafible idea, it ferves, like an argument from analogy, to enforce what the author advances, and to induce welled.

(All tropes being founded on the relation, which one object bears to another, the name of the one may be fubflutued for that of the other; and by this the vivacity of the idsa is generally increased.) The relation between a caufe and its effect is one of the first and mole obvious. Hence the caufe is fometimes figuratively put for the effect. Thus Mr. Addifon, writing of Italy, fiys,

Eloffoms, and fruits, and flowers together rife, And the whole year in gay confusion lies.

Here the "whole year" is plainly mean to figuify the productions of the year. The effect is also often put for the canfe ; as "grey hairs" for " old age," which produces grey hairs; and " thade" for the " trees," which caufe the finade. "The relation between the container and the thing contained is fo intimate and apparent, as naturally to give rife to tropes.

Spumaatem pateram, et pleno fe proluit auro.

# ORÍGIN AND NATURE OF, &C.

01

Where it is obvious, that the cup and gold are put for the liquor, contained in the golden cup. The name of a country is often ufed to fignify its inhabitants. To pray for the affiftance of Hoaven is the fame with praying for the affiftance of God, who is in Heaven. The relation between a fign and the thing fignifid is another fource of tropes. Thus,

Cedant arma togæ ; concedat laurea linguæ.

Here the "toga," which is the badge of the civil profeffions, and the "laurel," that of military honors, are each of them put for the civil and military charachers themfelves. ( Tropes, founded on thefe feveral relations of caufe and effect, container and contained, figm and thing fignified, are called by the name of metonomy.)

When a trope is founded on the relation between an antecedent and its confequent, it is called a metalepfits; Jas in the Roman phrafe, "fuit," or "wixit," to fignify that one was dead. " Fuit Ilhum et ingens glo-"ria Teuerum" expresses that the glory of Troy is no more.

(When the whole is put for a part, or a part for the whole; a genus for a fpecies, or a fpecies for a genus; the fingular number for the plural, or the plural for the fingular; in general, when any thing lefs, or any thing more, is put for the precife object meant; the figure is then termed a fynecdoche.) We fay, for inflance, "A fleet of fo many fail" inflead of fo many " (hips;" we frequently ufe the "head" for the "per-"fon," the "pole" for the "earth," the "waves" for the "fea." An attribute is often ufed for its fubjedt ; as " youth and beauty" for the "young and beautiful;" and fometimes a fubjed for its attribute. But the relation, by far the molf fruitful of tropes, is fimilitude, which is the fole foundation of metaphor.

# METAPHOR.

TALETAPHOR is founded entirely on the refemblance, which one object bears to another. It is therefore nearly allied to fimile or comparifon ; and is indeed a comparifon in an abridged form.) When we fay of a great minifter, "he upholds the flate, like a pillar, "which fupports the weight of an edifice," we evidently make a comparifon; but, when we fay of him, he is "the pillar of the flate," it becomes a metaphor.

( Of all the Figures of fjecch none approaches fo near to painting, as metaphor. It gives light and firength te defeription; makes intelletaal ideas in forme degree vifible by giving them color, fubilance, and fenfible qualities.) To produce this effect however a delicate hand is requifite; for by a little inaccuracy we may adroduce confution inflead of prometing perficiently.

Several rules therefore must be given for the proper management of metaphors,

(The first rule refpecting metaphors is, they must be fuited to the nature of the fubject 2) neither too numerous, nor too gay, nor too elevated for it; we must neither attempt to force the fubject by the use of them into a degree of elevation, not congruous to it; nor on the contrary fuffer i, to fall below its proper dignity. Some metaphors are beautiful in poetry, which would be unnatural in profe; fome are graceful in orations, which would be highly improper in historical or philofophical compositions. Figures are the drefs of fentiment. They should confequently be adapted to the ideas, which they use intended to adom.

The fecond rule reflects the choice of objects, whence metaphors are to be drawn. The field for figurative language is very wide. All nature opens her flores and allows us to collect them without refuraint. But (we mult beware of ufing fuch allufions, as rule in the mind diagreeable, mean, low, or dirty ideas. To render a metaphor perfect, it muit not only be apt, tort pleating; it mult entertain as well, as enlighten.) Dryden therefore can hardly eleapt the imputation of a very unpartonable breach of delicacy, when he obferves to the Earl of Dorftet, that " fome bad poems " carry their owners' marks about them; fome brand " or other on this baute b, cr that ear; that it is noterious."

"who are the owners of the cattle." The moftp leafing metaphors are derived from the frequent occurrences of art and nature, or from the civil transfations and cuftoms of mankind. Thus how expredive, yet at the fame time how familiar, is the image, which Otway has put into the mouth of Metellus in his play of Caius Marins, where he calls Subjectus

That mad wild bull, whom Marius lets loofe On each occasion, when he'd make Rome feel him, To tofs our laws and libertics in the air.

In the third place a metaphor fhould be founded on a refemblance, which is clear and firiking, not far forched, nor difficult to be diffeovered. Harth or forced metaphors are always difficaling, becaufe they perplex the reader, and inftead of illuftrating the thought render it intricate and confuted. Thus, for inflance, Cowley, fpeaking of his militrefs, expresses himself in the following forced and obfeure verses.

Wo to her flubborn heart ; if once mine come

foro the felfame room, "Twill tear and blow up all within, Ekke a grunada, flot into a magazine. Then full love keep the aftice and torn parts Of both our broken hearts; Shall out of both one new one make; Form hear the alloy, from ming the mental take;

For of her heart he from the flames will find

But little left behind ;

Mine only will remain entire ; No drofs was there, to perifh in the fire.

Metaphors, borrowed from any of the fciences, efpecially from particular profeffions, are almost always faulty by their obscurity.

In the fourth place we must never jumble metaphorical and plain language together ; never conftruct a period fo, that part of it must be understood metaphorically, part literally ; which always produces confusion. The works of Offian afford an infrance of the fault, we are now cenfuring. " Trothal went forth with the " ftream of his people, but they met a rock ; for Fingal " ftood unmoved; broken they rolled back from his "fide. Nor did they roll in fafety ; the fpear of the ginning is beautiful; the "ftream," the "unmoved " rock," the " waves rolling back broken," are expressions in the proper and confiftent language of figure ; but in the end, when we are told, " they did not roll " in fafety, becaufe the fpear of the king purfu-"ed their flight," the literal meaning is injudicioufly mixed with the metaphor; they are at the fame moment prefented to us, as waves that roll, and as men, that may be purfued and wounded by a fpear.

In the fifth place take care not to make two different metaphors meet on the fame object. This, which is called mixed metaphor, is one of the grofielt abufes.

of this figure. Shakefpeare's exprellion, for example, " to take arms againt a fea of troubles," makes a moft unnatural medly, and entirely confounds the imagination. More correct writers, than Shakefpeare, are fometimes guilty of this error. Mr. Additon fays, " There " is not a fingle view of human nature, which is not " fufficient to extinguish the feeds of pride." Here a wire is made to extinguish and to extinguish fedd.

In examining the propriety of metaphors it is a good xule, to form a picture of them, and to confider how the parts agree, and what kind of figure, the whole prefents, when delineated with a pencil.

Metaphors in the fixth place flould not be crowded together on the fame object. Though each of them be dillind ; yet, if they be heaped on one another, they produce confution. The following paffage from Horsee will exemplify this obfervation ;

Motum ex Metello confule civicum Bellique caufas, et vitia, et modes, Ludumque fortuna, gravefque Principum amicitias, et arma Nondum explatis uncha erooribus, Poricolofas plenum opus alcas, 'Tractas, et incedis per ignes

Suppolitos cineri dolofo.

This paffage, though very poetical, is rendered harfn and obfcure by three diftinct metaphors crowded to-

gether. Firft, " arma unsta cruoribus nondum expiatis ;" next, " opus plenum periculofic alex ;" and then, " incedis " per ignes fuppofitos cineri dolofo."

The laft rule concerning metaphors is, they flouid not be too far purfued. For, when the referentiance, which is the foundation of the figure, is long dwelt upon, and carried into all its minute circumftances, an allegory is produced inflead of a metaphor ; the reader is wearied, and the difcourfe becomes obforme. This is termed ftraining a metaphor. Dr. Young, whole imagination was more diffinguithed by ftrength, than, dalicacy, is often guilty of running down his metaphors. Speaking of old age, he fags, it fhould

Walk thoughtful on the filent, folemn flore Of that vaff ocean, it muff fail fo foon; And put good works on board; and wait the wind, That fhortly blows us into worlds unknown.

The two firft lines are uncommonly beautiful; but, when he continues the metaphor by "putting good "works on board, and waiting the wind," it is firained, and finks in dignity.

Having treated of metaphor, we fhall conclude this chapter with a few words concerning allegory.

An allegory is a continued metaphor; as it is the repreferation of one thing by another, that refembles it. Thus Prior makes Emma definite her conflancy to Henry in the following allegorical manner;

#### HYPERBOLE.

Did I but purpofe to embark with thee On the fmooth furface of a fummer's fea, While genic zephyra play with proforeous gales, And fortune's favor fils the fwelling fails ; But would forfake the fhip, and make the flore, When the winds whille, and the tempefes roat ?

The fame rules, that were given for metaphors, may be applied to allegories on account of the affinity between them. The only material difference befde the one being flort and the other prolonged is, that a metaphor always explains itfelf by the words, that are connecfed with it in their proper and literal meaning 1 as, when we fay, " Achilles was a lion ;" " an able minif-" ter is the pillar of the flate." Lion and pillar are here fufficiently interpreted by the mention of Achilles and the minifler, which are joined to them ; but an allegory may be allowed to fland lefs connected with the literal meaning ; the interpretation not being is plainly pointed out, but left to our own reflection.

# HYPERBOLE.

H YPERBOLE confifts in magnifying an object beyond its natural bounds. / This figure occurs very frequendy in all languages even in common convertiation. As forifi, as the wind; as white, as frow; and our utual forms of compliment are in general extravagant

#### HYPERBOLE.

hyperboles. From habit however these exaggerated expressions are feldom confidered, as hyperbolical.

Hyperboles are of two kinds ; fuch, as are employed in defiription, or fuch, as are fuggefted by paffion. Thofe are far beft, which are the effect of paffion ; fince it not only gives rife to the moft daring figures, but often renders them juft and natural. Hence the following paffage in Milton, though extremely hyperbolical, contains nothing, but what is natural and proper. It exhibits the mind of Satan agitated by rage and defair.

Mc miferable ! Which way full I fly Infinite wrath, and infinite defpair ? Which way I fly is hell; myfelf am hell; And in the loweft depth a lower deep, Still threatening to devour me, opens wide, To which the hell, I fuffer, feens a Heaven.

In fimple defoription hyperboles muß be employed with more caution./ When an earthquake or florm is deforibed, or when our imagination is carried into the midd of a battle, we can bear firong hyperboles without difpleafure. But, when only a woman in grief is prefented to our view, it is impollible not to be difguited with fuch eraggeration, as the following, in one of our dramatic poets ;

.\_\_\_\_I found her on the floor In all the florm of grief, yet beautiful,

Pouring forth tears at fuch a lavish rate, That, were the world on fire, they might have drown'd The wrath of Heaven, and quench'd the mighty ruin.

This is mere bombaft. The perfon herfelf, who labored under the diltraching agitations of grief, might be permitted to express herfelf in ftrong hyperbole; but the fpeflator, who defcribes her, cannot be allowed equal liberty. The jufl boundary of this figure cannot be afcartained by any precife rule. Good fenfe and an accurate taile mult afcertain the limit, beyond which, if it pass, it becomes extravagant.

# PERSONIFICATION AND APOSTROPHE.

W E proceed now to thole figures, which lie altogether in the thought, the words being taken in their common and literal fenfe. We fhall begin with perfondication, by which life and action are attributed to inamixe to bjecks. All poetry even in its moft humble form abounds in this figure. From profeit is far from being excluded / nay, even in common convertation frequent approaches are made to it. When we fay, the eirch *diviglt* for rais, or the fields *finile* with plenty is when ambition is fuid to be *reflife*, or a diffare to be *decified j* fuch expredions flow the facility, with which the mind can accommodate the properties of living creature is to things innaimate, or abstrad conceptions.

There are three different degrees of this figure ; which it is requifite to diffinguilh, in order to determine the propriety of its ule. The first is, when fome of the properties of living creatures are afcribed to inanimate objects; the fecond, when those inanimate objects are deforibed, as aching like fuch, as have life; and the third, when they are exhibited, either as speaking to us, or as litening to what we fay to them.

The first and lowest degree of this figure, which confilts in afcribing to innanimate objects forme of the qualities of living creatures, raifes the flyle fo little, that the humbleft discourfe admits it without any force. Thus "a raging florm, a deceitful difeafe, a cruel difaster," are familiar expressions. This indeed is fo obscure a degree of perfonitication, that it might perhaps be properly classed with fimple metaphors, which almost escape our observation.

The fecond degree of this figure is, when we reprefent inanimate objects acting like thole, that have life. Here we rife a flep higher, and the perfonitacion becomes fentible. According to the nature of the action, which we aferibe to thole inanimate objects, and to the particularity, with which we deferibe it, is the frength of the figure. (When purfued to a confiderable length, it belongs only to fludied harmorues ; when flightly nucled, it may be admitted into lefs clevated compofions. Ciceros for example, fpaking of the cafes

where killing a man is lawful in felf defence, ufes the following exprellions; "Aliquando usóin gledius ad ac-"cidendum hominem ab ipfu porrigitur legibus." Here the laws are beautifully perfonified, as reaching forth their hand, to give us a fword for putting a man to death.

In poetry perfonitications of this kind are extremely frequent, and are indeed the life and foul of it. In the deferiptions of a poet, who has a lively fancy, every thing is animated. Homer, the father of poetry, is remarkable for the use of this figure. War, peace, darts, rivers, every thing in thort is alive in his writings. The fame is true of Milton and Shakefpeare. No perfonifaction is more firking, or introduced on a more proper occafion, than the following of Milton upon Eve's eating the forbidden fruit ;

So faying, her rafh hand in evil hour Forth reaching to the fruit, fhe pluck'd, fhe ate ; Earth felt the wound, and nature from her feat, Sighing thro' all her works, gave figns of wo, That all was loft.

The third and higheft degree of this figure is yet to be mentioned ; when inanimate objects are reprefented, not only as feeling and acting, but as fpeaking to us, or littening, while we addrefs them./ This is the bolded of all theorical figures; it is the flyle of ftrong padion only; and therefore fhould never be attempted, except when the mind is confiderably heated and agitated.

Milton affords a very beautiful example of this figure in that moving and tender addrefs, which Eve makes to Parudife immediately before the is compelled to leave it.

106

Oh, unerpected firoke, worfe than of death ! Muft 1 thus leave thee, peradife ? Thus leave Thee, naive 6 foil; i thefe happy walks and finders, Fit haunt of Goeis; where I had hope to fpend Quiet, though fad, the refpite of that day, Which muft be mortal to us both ? O flowers, That never will in other climate grow, My early vifitation, and my laft At even; which I bred up with tender hand From your firft opening buds, and gave you names ; Who now fhall reary you to the fun, or rank Your tribes, and water from the amboffal fount ?

This is the real language of nature and of female paffion.

In the management of this fort of performination tworules are to be obferred. First, never attempt its unlefs prompted by frrong parling, and never continue its, when the paffion begins to fubfide. The fecond rule is, never performing an object, which has not form dignity in itfelf, and which is incapable of making a proper figure in the elevation, to which we ratife it. To addrefs the body of a deceafed friend is natural; but to addrefs the elothes, which he wore, intro dues low and degrading ideas. So likewize addrefing the feveral

## APOSTROPHE.

parts of the body, as if they were animated, is not agreeable to the dignity of paffion. For this reafon the following paffage in Pope's Eloifa to Abelard is liable to cenfure.

Dear fatal name, reft ever unreveal'd, Nor pais thefe lips, in holy filence feal'd. Uide it, my heart, within that clofe difusife, Where, mix'd with Gods, his low'd idea lies ; O, write it not, my hand ;—his name appears Already written.—blot it out, my tears.

Here the name of Abelard is firth perfonition is which, as the name of a perfon often fands for the perfon himfelf, is expoled to no objection. Next Eloifa perfonities her own heart ; and, as the heart is a dignified part of the human frame, and is often put for the mind, this allo may pais without cenfure. But, when file adductfes her hand, and tells it not to write his name, this is forced and unnatural. Yet the figure becomes fill worfe, when fine exhorts her tears to blot out, what her hand had written. The two laft lines are indeed altogether unfuitable to the tendernefs, which breathes through the ref. of that inimitable poem.

APOSTROPHE is an address to a real perfort, but one, who is either abfent or dead, as if he were prefeat, and liftening to us. This figure is in boldneis a degree lower, than perfonitication; fince is requires lefs effort of imagination to foppole performs prefeat, who

are dead or abfent, than to animate infenfible beings, and dired our difcourfe to them. The poems of Offian abound in beautiful inflances of this figure. "Weep on "the rocks of roaring winds, O Muid of Inilfore. "Bend thy fair head over the waves, thou fairer, than "the ghoft of the hills, when it moves in a funbeam at "noon over the filence of Morven. He is fallen. Thy "youth is low; pale beneath the fword of Cuchullin."

COMPARISON, ANTITHESIS, INTERROGA-TION, EXCLAMATION, AND OTHER FIGURES OF SPEECH.

A Comparison or fimile is, when the refemblance between two objects is expressed in form, and utifully purfued more fully, than the nature of a metaphor admits. As when we fay, " The actions of princes are " like thofe great rivers, the courfe of which every one " beholds, but their fprings have been feen by few." "This hort inflance will flow that a happy comparison is a fort of fparkling ornament, which adds luftre and beauty to difcourfe.

All comparifons may be reduced under two heads ; *explaining* and *embell/fing* comparisons. For, when a writer compares an object with any other thing, it always is, or ought to be, with a view to make us under-

fand that object more clearly, or to render it more pleafing. (Even abitrat reafoning admits explaining comparifons. For inflance, the diffindino hetween the powers of fenfe and imagination is in Mr. Harris's Hermes illuftrated by a fimile ; "As wars," fays he, " would " not be adequate to the purpofe of fignature, if " it had not the power to retain as well, as to receive " the imprefilon ; the fame holds of the foul with re-" fped to fenfe and imagination. Senfe is its receptive " wolver, and imagination its retentive. Had it fenfe " without imagination, it would not be as wars, but as " water; where, though all imprefilons be inflandly " made, yet as foon, as they are made, they are loft," Ia comparions of this kind perfoicuity and ulefulaeis are chiefly to be fludied.)

Ext embellifting comparitons are thofe, which molt frequently occur. Refemblance, it has been obferved, is the foundation of this figure. Yet refemblance muft not be taken in too Afričt a fenfe for actual fimilitude. Two object may raife a train of concordant ideas in the mind, though they refemble each other, firidly fpeaking, in nothing. For example, to defiribe the nature of foft and melancholy mufic, Offian fays, " The mufic " of Carryl was, like the memory of joys, that are paff, " pleafant and mounful to the foul." This is happy and delicate ; yet no kind of mufic bears any refemsilance to the memory of paft joys.

We fhall now confider, when comparisons may be introduced with propriety. Since they are the language of imagination rather, than of paffion, an author can hardly commit a greater fault, than in the midft of paffion to introduce a fimile. Our writers of tragedies often err in this refeet. Thus Addifon in his Cato makes Portius, juft after Lucia had bid him farewelk for ever, espress himfelf in a fludied comparison.

Thus o'er the dying lamp the unfteady flame Hangs quivering on a point, leaps off by fits, And falls again, as loath to quit its hold. Thou muft not go; my foul flill hovers o'er thee, And can't get loofe.

As comparison is not the flyle of frong pallion ; fo, when defigned for embellifilment, it is not the language of a mind totally unmoved. Being a figure of dignity, it always requires fome elevation in the fubject, to make it proper. It fuppoles the imagination to be calivered, though the heart is not agitated by pallion. The language of fimile lies in the middle region between the highly pathetic and the very humble flyle. It is however a fparkling ornament; and mind confequently dazzle and fatigue, if it recut too often. Similies even in poetry flould be employed with moderation ; but in profe much more fo; o therwite the flyle will become difguftingly Infectous, and the ornament lofe its beauty and effed.

We shall now confider the nature of those objects, from which comparisons hould be drawn.

In the first place they must not be drawn from things, which have too near and obvious a refemblance of the objed, with which they are compared. The plasture, we receive from the act of comparing, ariles from the discovery of likenesses among things of different species, where we should not at first fight expect a refemblance.

Eut in the fecond place, as comparifons ought not to be founded on likeneffes too obvious ; much lefs ought they to be founded on thole, which are too faint and diftant. Thefe inflead of affilting firain the fancy to comprehend them, and throw no light upon the fubjeft.

In the third place the object, from which a comparifon is drawn, ought never to be an unknown object, nor ons, of which few people can have a clear idea. Therefore fimilies, founded on philofophical difcoveries, or on any thing, with which perfons of a particular trade only, or a particular profeilion, are acquaintes, produce not their proper effect. They finold be drawn from thofe illuftrious and noted objects, which moß readers have either feen, or can flrongly conceive.

( In the fourth place in compositions of a ferious or elevated kind fimilies should never be drawn from low

#### ANTITHESIS:

or mean objects.) Thefe degrade and vilify ; whereas fimilies are generally intended to embellifh and dignify. Therefore, except in burlefque writings, or where an object is meant to be degraded, mean ideas flould never 10 prefented.

ANTITHESIS is founded on the contraft or opposition of two objects. By contrast objects, opposed to each other, appear in a ftronger light. Beauty, for inftance, never appears fo charming, as when contrasted with uglinefs. Antithefis therefore may on many occafions be used advantageoufly, to firengthen the impreffion, which we propose that any object should make. Thus Cicero in his oration for Milo, reprefenting the improbability of Milo's defigning to take away the life of Clodius, when every thing was unfavorable to fuch defign, after he had omitted many opportunities of effectingfuch a purpose, heightens our conviction of this improbability by a fkilful ufe of this figure. " Quem igitur cum " omnium gratia interficere noluit ; bunc voluit cum aliquo-" rum querela ? Quem jure, quem loco, quem tempore, quem " impune, non est aufus ; bune injuria, iniquo loco, alieno " tempore, periculo capitis, non dubitavit occidere ?" Here the antithefis is rendered complete by the words and members of the fentence, expressing the contrasted objects, being fimilarly constructed, and made to correfpond with each other.

We must however acknowledge that frequent use of.

#### INTERROGATIONS.

antichefis, efpecially where the opposition in the words, is nice and quaint, is apt to make flyle unpleading. A maxim or moral faying very properly receives this form ; because it is fuppoled to be the effect of meditation, and is defigned to be engraven on the memory, which recalls it nore easily by the aid of contrafted expredions. But, where feveral fuch fentences fucceed each other ; where this is an author's favorite and prevailing mode of expredion ; his flyle is expoded to cenfure.

INTERROGATIONS and Exclamations are pationate figures. The literal ufe of interrogation is to afk a quefion; but, when men are prompted by pation, whatever they would afirm, or deny with great earnednefs, they naturally put in the form of a quefion *j* exprefling thereby the firmefit confidence of the truth of their own opinion ; and appealing to their hearers for the imposfibility of the contrary. Thus in feripure; "God is not a man, that he fhould lie; nor the fon of "man, that he thould repent. Hath he faid it ? And "fhall he not do it ? Hath he fpoken it ? And fhall he "not make it good ?"

Interrogations may be employed in the protecution of clofe and earned readoning; but exclamations belong only to foronger emotions of the mind; to farprife, anger, joy, grief, and the like. Thefe, being natural figus of a moved and agitated mind, always, when properly employed, make us fyrmpathile with thofe, L a .-

# 114 VISION AND CLIMAX.

who use them, and enter into their feelings. Nothing however has a worfe effect, than frequent and uncadonable use of exclamations. Young, unexperienced writers fuppole that by pouring them forth plentcoully they render their compositions warm and animated. But the contrary follows ; they render them frigid to excefs. When an author is always calling upon us to enter into transports, which he has faid nothing to infjire, he excites our difgult and indignation.

Another figure of fpeech, fit only for animated composition, is called VISION ; when instead of relating fomething, that is paft, we use the prefent tense, and describe it, as if passing before our eyes. Thus Cicero in his fourth oration against Catiline ; " Videor enim " milii hanc urbem videre, lucem orbis terrarum atque arcem " omnium gentium, fubito uno incendio concidentum ; cerno 44 animo fepulta in patria miferos atque infepultos acervos ci-" vium ; verfatur mili ante oculos afpectus Cethegi, et furor, " in veftra cade bacchantis." This figure has great force, when it is well executed, and when it flows from genuine enthuliafm. Otherwife it fhares the fame fate with all feeble attempts toward paffionate figures ; that of throwing ridicule upon the author, and leaving the reader more cool and uninterested, than he was before.

The last figure, which we shall mention, and which is of frequent use among all public speakers, is CLIMAR. It confifts in an artful exaggeration of all the circumftances of fome object or action, which we wish to place in a ftrong light. It operates by a gradual rife of one circumstance above another, till our idea is raifed to the higheft pitch. We fhall give an inftance of this figure. from a printed pleading of a celebrated Lawyer in a charge to the jury in the cafe of a woman, who was accufed of murdering her own child. " Gentlemen, if " one man had any how flain another ; if an adverfary " had killed his oppofer ; or a woman occafioned the " death of her enemy ; even thefe criminals would have " been capitally punished by the Cornelian law. But, " if this guiltlefs infant, who could make no enemy, " had been murdered by its own nurfe ; what punifi-" ments would not the mother have demanded ? With " what cries and exclamations would fhe have funned " your ears ? What fhall we fay then, when a woman, " guilty of homicide ; a mother, of the muder of her " innocent child, hath comprifed all those middeeds in " one fingle crime ; a crime, in its own nature, detcha-" ble ; in a woman prodigious ; in a mother incredi-" ble ; and perpetrated against one, whose age called "for compation ; whofe near relation claimed affection ; " and whole innocence deferved the highest favor ?" Such regular climaxes however, though they have great beauty ; yet at the fame time have the appearance of art and fludy ; and therefore, though they may be admitted into formal harangues; yet they are not the

## 116 CENERAL CHARACTERS OF STYLE.

language of paffion, which feldom proceeds by fteps for regular.

# GENERAL CHARACTERS OF STYLE. DIFFUSE, CONCISE, FEEBLE, NERVOUS, DRY,

PLAIN, NEAT, ELEGANT, FLOWERY.

HAT different fubjects ought to be treated in different kinds of ftyle is a polition fo obvious, that it requires no illustration. Every one knows that treatifes of philofophy fhould not be composed in the fame ftyle with orations. It is equally apparent, that different parts of the fame composition require a variation in the ftyle. Yet amid this variety we ftill expect to find in the compositions of any one man fome degree of uniformity in manner ; we expect to find fome prevailing character of ftyle impreffed on all his writings, which will mark his particular genius and turn of mind. The orations in Livy differ confiderably in ftyle, as they ought to do, from the reft of his hiftory. The fame may be obferved in those of Tacitus. Yet in the orations of both thefe hiftorians the diffinguifhing manner of each may be clearly traced ; the fplendid turnefs of the one, and the fententious brevity of the other. Wherever this is real genius, it prompts to one kind of fivle rather, than to another. Where this is wanting ; where there is no marked, nor peculiar character in the compositions of an author ; we are apt to conclude, and

## DIFFUSE AND CONCISE. 117

not without caufe, that he is a vulgar and trivial author, who writes from imitation, and not from the impulfe of genius.

One of the first and most obvious diffindions in flyle arifes from an author's expanding his thoughts more or lifes. This diffindion forms, what are termed the diffufe and concife Ryles. A concife writer compression his ideas into the fewest words ; he employs none, but the most expression of all thofe, which are not a material addition to the fence. Whatever ornament he admits, is adopted for the fake of force rather, than of grace. The fame thought is inver repeated. The utmost precision is fludied in his fentences ; and they are generally deligned to fuggelt more to the reader's imagination, than they express.

A diffufe writer unfolds his idea fully. He places it in a variety of lights, and gives the reader every pofiible affiltance for underitanding it completely. He is not very anxious to exprefs it at firft in its full ftrength, becaufe he intends repeating the imprefion ; and, what he wants in ftrength, he endeavors to fupply by copionfinef. His periods naturally flow into fome length, and, having room for ornament of every kind, he gives it free admittance.

Each of thefe flyles has its peculiar advantages; and each becomes faulty, when carried to the extreme. Of coacifenels carried as far, as propriety will allow, per-

## 8 DIFFUSE AND CONCISE.

haps in fome cafes farther, Tacitus the hittorian and Montefquieu in " l'Efprit de Loix" are remarkable examples. Of a beautiful and magnificent diffalencis Ciccro is undoubtedly the noblet inftance, which can be given. A Hitfon alfo and Sir William Temple may be ranked in the fame clafs.

In determining when to adopt the concife, and when the diffuse manner, we must be guided by the nature of the composition. Discourses, that are to be spoken, require a more diffuse ftyle than books, which are to be read. In written compositions a proper degree of concifenefs has great advantages. It is more lively ; keeps up attention ; makes a ftronger impression on the mind ; and gratifies the reader by fupplying more exercise to his thoughts. Defcription, when we wish to have it vivid and animated, fhould be concife. Any redundant words or circumftances encumber the fancy, and render the object, we prefent to it, confuled and indiffinct. The ftrength and vivacity of description, whether in profe or poetry, depend much more upon a happy choice of one or two important circumftances, than upon the multiplication of them. When we defire to ftrike the fancy, or to move the heart, we fhould be concife ; when to inform the underftanding, which is more deliberate in its motions, and wants the affiltance of a guide, it is better to be full.) Hiftorical narration may be beautiful either in a concife or diffule manner

## NERVOUS AND FEEBLE.

according to the author's genius. Livy and Herodotus are diffuse; Thucydides and Sallust are concife; yet they are all agreeable.

The nervous and the feeble are generally confidered, as characters of ftyle of the fame import with the concife and the diffuse. Indeed they frequently coincide ; yet this does not always hold ;/ fince there are inftances of writers, who in the midst of a full and ample ftyle have maintained a confiderable degree of ftrength. Livy is an inftance of the truth of this obfervation. The foundation of a nervous or weak ftyle is laid in an author's manner of thinking. If he conceive an object firongly, he will express it with energy ; but, if he have an indiffinct view of his fubject, it will clearly appear in his ftyle. Unmeaning words and loofe epithets will escape him ; his expressions will be vague and general ; his arrangement indiffinct ; and our conception of his meaning will be faint and confused. But a nervous writer, be his ftyle concife or extended, gives us always a ftrong idea of his meaning./ His mind being full of his fubject, his words are always exprefive ; every phrase and every figure renders the picture, which he would fet before us, more firiking and complete.

It muft however be obferved, that/too great fludy of fit-ngth is apt to betray writers into a harth manner. Harthnefs proceeds from uncommon words, from forged invertions in the confirmation of a fentence, and

# 220 NERVOUS, FEEELE AND BRY.

from neglect of fmoothnefs and eafe. ) This is reckoned the fault of fome of our earlieft claffics ; fuch, as Sir Walter Raleigh, Sir Francis Bacon, Hooker, Harrington. Cudworth, and other writers of confiderable reputation in the days of Queen Elizabeth, James I. and Charles I. Thefe writers had nerves and ftrength in a high degree ; and are to this day diffinguished by this quality in ftyle. But the language in their hands was very different from what it is now, and was indeed entirely formed upon the idiom and conftruction of the Latin in the arrangement of fentences. The prefent form of our language has in fome degree facrificed the ftudy of ftrength to that of eafe and perfpicuity. Our arrangement is lefs forcible, but more plain and natural ; and this is now confidered, as the genius of our tongue.

Hitherto flyle has been confidered under thole charafters, which regard its expressiveness of an author's meaning. We shall now confider it with respect to the degree of ornament, employed to embellish it. Here (the flyle of different authors feem to rife in the following gradation ; a dry, a plain, a neat, an elegant, a flowery mannet.

A dry manner excludes every kind of ornament. Content with being underflood, it aims not to pleafe either the fancy or the ear. This is tolerable only in pare didaCite writing; and even there, to make us

## PLAIN AND NEAT.

bear it, great folidity of matter and entire perfpicuity of language are required.

A plain ftyle rifes one degree above a dry one. A writer of this charafter employs very little ornament of any kind, and refts almoft entirely upon his fende. But, though he does not engage us by the arts of composition, he avoids difguiling us, like a dry and a harft writer. Befide perfpicuity he obferves propriety, purity, and precifion in his language ; which form no inconfiderable degree of beauty. Livelinets and force are also compatible with a plain ftyle ; and thereforee fuch an author, if his fentiments be good, may be fulficiently agreeable\_/ The difference between a dry and a plain writer is this ; the former is incapable of ornament ; the latter goes not in purfuit of it. / Of thofe, who have employed the plain ftyle, Dean Swift is an eminent example.

A near flyle is next in order ; and have we are advanced into the region of ornament ; but not of the most flyarking kind. A writer of this character flows by his attention to the choice of words and to their graceful collocation that he does not delpife the beauty of language. His fentences are always free from the incumbrance of fuperfluous words ; of a moderate length ; inclining rather to brevity, than a fwelling fluxdure ; and clofing with propriety. There is varieay in his cudence ; but no appearance of fluxife hair

## ELEGANT AND FLOWERY.

122

mony. His figures, if he ufe any, are fhort and accurate rather, than bold and glowing. Such a ftyle may be attained by a writer, whole powers of fancy or genius are not great, by induftry and attention. This fort of ftyle is not unfuitable to any fubject whatever. A familiar epiftle, or a law paper on the drieft fubject, may be written with neatnets ; and a fermon, or a philofophical treatife in a neat ftyle, is read with fattisfaction.

An elegant flyle implies a higher degree of ornament, than a neat one ; polfefling all the virtues of ornament without any of its excelled or defects. Complete clegance implies great perfpicuity and propristy ; purity in the choice of words ; and care and fkill in their arrangement. It implies farther the beauties of imagination fipread over flyle as far, as the fubject permits ; and all the illuftration, which figurative language adds, when properly employed. An elegant writer in fhort is one, who delights the fancy and the ear, while he informs the underflamding ; who clothes his ideas in all the beauty of exprefilon, but does not overload them with any of its milplaced finery.

A forid tyle implies excefs of ornament. In a young compofer it is not only pardonable, but often a promifing dynamous. But, although it may be allowed to youth in their first effays; it muft not receive the fame indulgence from writers of more experience. In them judgment flowld chalten imagination, and reject

#### STYLE-SIMPLICITY.

every ornament, which is unfuitable or redundant. That thiel fplendor of language, which fome writers perpetually affect, is truly contemptible. With fuch it is a luxuriancy of words, not of fancy. They forget that, unlefs founded on good fenfe and folid thought, the molf florid flyle is but a childifh impofition on the public.

# STYLE. SIMPLE, AFFECTED, VEHEMENT. DIRECTIONS FOR FORMING & PROPER STYLE.

DIMPLICITY, applied to writing, is a term very commonly uied; but, like many other critical terms, often uied without precifion. The different meanings of the word fimplicity are the chief caufe of this inaccuracy. It is therefore necessary to fhow, in what fente fimplicity is a proper attribute of flyle. There are four different acceptations, in which this term is taken.

The first is fimplicity of composition, as opposed to too great a variety of parts. This is the fimplicity of plan in tragedy,) as diffinguished from double plots and crowded incidents ; the fimplicity of the Iliad in opposition to the digrefilons of Lucan ; the fimplicity of Grecian architecture in opposition to the irregular variety of the Gothe. (Simplicity in this fense is the fame with unity.)

## SIMPLICITY.

(The fecond fenfe is fimplicity of thought in oppofition to refinement. Simple thoughts are thole, which flow naturally; which are fuggefled by the fubject or occafion; and which, when once fuggefled, are enfly underflood by all.) Refinement in writing means a lefs obvious and natural train of thought, which, when carried too far, approaches to intricacy, and dipleafes us by the appearance of being far fought. Thus Parnell is a Poet of much greater fimplicity in his turn of thought, than Cowley. In thefe two fenfes fimplicity has no relation to fight.

The third fenfe of fimplicity regards ftyle, and is oppoled to too much ornament, or pomp of language. Thus we fay Mr. Locke is a fimple, Mr. Harvey a florid writer. A fimple ftyle, in this fenfe, coincides with a plain or neat ftyle.

The fourth fende of fimplicity also refpects flyle ; but it regards not fo much the degree of ornament employed, as the eafy and natural manner, in which our language exprefies our thoughts. / In this fende fimplicity is compatible with the highest ornament. Homer, for example, poffedies this fimplicity in the greatest perfection ; and yet no writer has more ornament and beauty. (This fimplicity is opposed not to ornament, but to affectation of omament ; and is a fuperior excellence in composition.)

SIMPLICITY-AFFECTATION. 125

A fimple writer has no marks of art in his expression ; it appears the very language of nature. We fee not the writer and his labor, but the man in his own natural character. He may be rich in expression ; he may be full of figures and of fancy ; but these flow from him without effort ; and he feems to write in this manner, not because he has studied it, but because it is the mode of expression most natural to him. With this character of ftyle a certain degree of negligence is not inconfiftent ; for too accurate an attention to words is foreign to it. Simplicity of ftyle, like fimplicity of manners, fhows a mans fentiments and turn of mind without difguise. A more studied and artificial mode of writing, however beautiful, has always this difadvantage, that it exhibits an author in form, like a man ar court, where splendor of dress and the ceremonial of behaviour conceal those peculiarities, which diftinguish one man from another. But reading an author of fimplicity is like converting with a perfon of rank at home and with cafe, where we fee his natural manners and his

<sup>1</sup> With regard to fimplicity in general we may obferve, that the antient original writers are always most emineut for it.<sup>1</sup> This proceeds from a very obvious caufe ; they wrote from the dictates of genius, and were not formed upon the labors and writings of others.

Of affectation, which is oppofed, to fimplicity of ftyle, M 2

# AFFECTATION.

we have a remarkable example in Lord Shaftefbury. Though an author of confiderable merit, he expresses nothing with fimplicity. He feems to have thought it vulgar and beneath the dignity of a man of quality, to fpeak like other men. Hence he is ever in bufkins : full of circumlocutions and artificial elegance. In every fentence we fee marks of labor and art; nothing of that eafe, which expresses a fentiment coming natural and warm from the heart. He abounds with figures and ornament of every kind; is fometimes happy in them ; but his fondness for them is too vihible ; and, having once feized fome metaphor or allufion, that pleafed him, he knows not how to part with it. He poffeffed delicacy and refinement of tafte in a degree, that may be called exceffive and fickly ; but he had little warmth of paffion ; and the coldness of his character fuggefted that artificial and stately manner, which appears in his writings. No author is more dangerous, to the tribe of imitators, than Shaftefbury : who amid feveral very confiderable blemifhes has many dazzling and impofing beauties.

It is very poffible however for an author to write with fimplicity, and yet without beauty. He may be free from affectation, and not have merit. / Beautiful implicity fuppofes an author to poffeis real genius ; and to write with foliality, purity, and brilliancy of imagination. / In this cafe file furplicity of his manner is the

## PROPER STYLE.

crowning ornament ; jit heightens every other beauty ; it is the drefs of nature, without which all beauties are imperic@. But, if mere abfence of affectation were fufficient to conflictute beauty of flyle ; weak and dull writers might often lay claim to it. A diffinction therefore mult be made between that fimplicity, which accompanies true genius and is entirely compatible with every proper ornament of flyle, and that, which is the effect of carefilmefs.

/Another charafter of flyle, different from thofe already mentioned, is veherence. This always implies fhrength; and is not in any refpect incompatible with fimplicity. It is diffinguifhed by a peculiar ardor ; it is the language of a man, whofe imagination and paffions are glowing and impettous; j who, neglecting inferior graces, pours himfelf forth with the rapidity and fulleds of a torrent. This belongs to the higher kinds of oratory; and is rather expected from a man, who is fpeaking, than from one, who is writing in his clofet. D=mofthenes is the most full and perfect example of this kind of tyle.

Having explained the different characters of flyle, we fhall conclude our obfervations with a few directions for attaining a good flyle in general.

The first direction is, study clear ideas of the fubjest, on which you are to write or speak.) What we conceive clearly and feel strongly, we naturally ex-

# 128 DIRECTIONS FOR FORMING

prefs with clearnefs and ftrength. We fhould therefore think clofely on the fubje@, till we have attained a full and ditha@ view of the matter, which we are to clothe in words; till we become warm and interefted in it; then, and then only, fhall we find expression begin to flow.

Secondly, to the acquifition of a good ftyle frequeney of composing is indispensably necessary./ But it is not every kind of composing, that will improve ftyle. / By a carelefs and hafty habit of writing a bad ftyle will be acquired ; more trouble will afterward be neceffary to unlearn faults, then to become acquainted with the rudiments of composition. In the beginning therefore we ought to write flowly and with much care. Facility and fpeed are the fruit of practice. We must be eautious however, not to retard the courfe of thought. nor cool the ardor of imagination, by pauling too long on every word. On certain occasions a glow of compolition must be kept up, if we hope to express ourselves. happily, though at the expense of fome inaccuracies. A more fevere examination muft be the work of correction./ What we have written, fhould be laid by fome time, till the ardor of composition be past :/ till partiality for our expressions be weakened, and the expresfions themfelves be forgotten ; and then, reviewing our work with a cool and critical eye, as if it were the performance of another, we shall discover many imperfections, which at first escaped us. /

#### A PROPER STYLE.

( Thirdly, acquaintance with the ftyle of the beft authors is peculiarly requifite. Hence a just taste will be formed, and a copious fund of words fupplied on every fubject. / No exercife perhaps will be found more ufeful for acquiring a proper ftyle, than translating fome paffage from an eminent author into our own words. Thus to take, for inftance, a page of one of Addison's Spectators. and read it attentively two or three times, till we are in full poffession of the thoughts, it contains ; then to lay afide the book ; to endeavour to write out the paffage from memory as well, as we can ; and then to compare, what we have written, with the ftyle of the au-Such an exercife will fhew us our defects ; will thor. teach us to correct them; and from the variety of expreffion, which it will exhibit, will conduct us to that. which is most beautiful.

/ Fourthly, caution muft be ufed againft fervile imitation of any author whatever. Defire of imitating hampers genius ; and generally produces fliffiels of expreffion/ They, who follow an author cloicly, commonly copy his faults as well, as his beauties. No one will ever become a good writeror fpeaker, who has not fome confidence in his own genius. We coght carefully to avoid uting any author's peculiar phrafes, and of tranferibing paffages from him. Such a habit will be fatal to all genuine composition. It is much better to have fomething of our own, though of moderate beauty, than

### 130 DIRECTIONS FOR FORMING, &c.

to fhine in borrowed ornaments, which will at laft betray the poverty of our genius.

/ Fifthly, always adapt your flyle to the fubject, and likewife to the capacity of your hearers, if you are to fpeak in public. / To attempt a poetical flyle, when it fhould be our bufinefs only to reafon, is in the higheft degree awkward and abford. To fpeak with elaborate pomp of words before thofe, who cannot comprehend them, is equally ridiculous. When we are to write or fpeak, we fhould previoufly fix in our minds a clear idea of the end aimed at ; keep this fleadily in view, and adapt our flyle to it.

Laftly, let not attention to ftyle engrofs us fo much, as to prevent a higher degree of attention to the thoughts. ) This rule is more necessary, fince the prefent tafte of the age is directed more to ftyle, than to thought. It is much more easy to drefs up trifling and common thoughts with fome beauty of expression, than to afford a fund of vigorous, ingenious, and ufeful fentiments. The latter requires genius : the former may be attained by industry. Hence the crowd of writers, who are rich in ftyle, but poor in fentiment. Cuftom obliges us to be attentive to the ornaments of ftyle, if we with our labors to be read and admired. But he is a contemptible writer, who looks not beyond the drefs of language ; who lays not the chief stress upon his matter, and employs not fuch ornaments of ftyle to recommend it, as are manly, not foppifh.

CRITICAL EXAMINATION OF MR. ADDISON'S STYLE IN NO. 411 OF THE SPECTATOR.

HAVING fully infifted on the fubject of language, we fhall now commence a critical analysis of the flyle of forme good author. This will fuggelt obfervations, which we have not hitherto had occasion to make, and will flow in a practical light the use of those, which have been made.

Mr. Addition, though one of the moft beautiful writers in our language, is not the moft correct; a circumfance, which makes his composition a proper fubjed of criticiim. We proceed therefore to examine No. 417, the first of his celebrated effays on the pleasures of the imagination in the fixth volume of the Spectator. It begins thus;

Our fight is the most perfect, and most delightful of all our fenses.

This featence is clear, precife and fimple. The author in a few plain words lays down the propolition, which he is going to illuftrate. A first featence should foldom be long, and never intricate.

He might have faid, our fight is the most perfect and the most delightful. But in omitting to repeat the particle the has been more judicious; for, as between perfect

# 132 CRITICAL EXAMINATION and *delightful* there is no contrast, fuch a repetition is

unneceffary. He proceeds ;

It fills the mind with the largef waristy of ideas, converfix with its objects at the greateff diffance, and continues the longeft in attion, without being tired or fatiated with its proper cojeyment.

This fentence is remarkably harmonious, and well conflradted. It is entirely perfpicuous. It is loaded with no unneceffary words. That quality of a good fentence, which we termed its unity, is here perfectly preferred. The members of it also grow, and rife ahove each other in found, till it is conducted to one of the moft harmonious clocks, which our language admits. It is moreover figurative without being too much fo for the fubjedt. There is no fault in it whatever, except this, the epithet *large*, which he applies to earledy is more commonly applied to extent, than to number. It is plain however, that he employed it, to avoid the repetition of the word great, which occurs immediately afterward.

The feelfs of feeling som, indeed, give us a notion of extenform, flags, and all other ideas that enter at the tys, except colours ; but, at the fame time, it is very much framined and confined in its operations, to the number, bulk, and diffance of its particular object. But is not every fence confined as much, as the fence of feeling, to the number, bulk, and diffance of its own objects. The turn of experience

## OF MR. ADDISON'S STYLE. 13

is allo very inaccurate, requiring the two words, with regard, to be inferted after the word operations, in order to make the fenfe clear and intelligible. The epithet particular feems to be ufed inflead of foculiar; but their words, though often confounded, are of very different import. Particular is oppoled to general ; peculiar flands oppoled to what is pofielfed in common with after.

Our fight frems defined to supply all these deficit, and may be confidered as a more delicate and diffuse kind of touch, that foreads itslif over an infinite multitude of badies, compreheads the largest figures, and brings into our vach fome of the mass remarks of the universe.

This fantence is perfoicaous, graceful, well arranged, and highly mulical. Its confitution is fo fimilar to that of the fecond fantence, that, had it immediately fucceeded it, the ear would have been fenfible of a faulty monotony. But the interpolition of a period prevents this effect.

It is this forf, which furnifies the integration with its idea: i fo that by the plafares of the integration or face, (canifs I full up fromiticantly) I face more full as arise from withle objects, there when use have them attually in our wires, or when we call up their ideas into our minde by plaintings, flatters, definitions, or any the like occifon.

The parenthefis in the middle of this featence is not N

### 134 CRITICAL EXAMINATION

clear. It fhould have been, terms which I fhall ufe promiftawfly; 5 fince the verb ufe does not relate to the pleafures of the imagination, but to the terms, fancy and imagination, which were meant to be fynonymous. To call a painting or a flatue an occafion is not accurate ; nor is it very proper to fpeak of calling up ideat by occafont. The common phrafe, any fueb means, would have been more natural.

We cannot indeed bases a fingle image in the fancy, that did not make its first entrance through the first, i but we have the power of retaining, altering, and compounding thofe images which we have one received, into all the variaties of picture and wiften, that are most agreeable to the imagination ; fore, by this faculty, a man in a dangeon to capable of entertaining him/elf mith feener and land/forper more beautiful than any that can be spend in the whole compair of nature.

In one member of this fentence there is an inaccuracy in fyntax. It is proper to fay, altering and compounding the finance which we have once received, into all the variches of fidure and vision. But we cannot with propriety fay, retaining them into all the varieties ; yet the arrangement requires this confurction. This error might have been avoided by arranging the paffage in the following manner ; "We have the power of retaining "thofe images, which we have once received ; and of " altering and compounding them into all the varieties " of picture and vision." The latter part of the fortence is clear and deigant. OF MR. ADDISON'S STYLE. 135

There are few words in the English language, which are employed in a more loofe and uncircumferibed fenfe than these of the fancy and the imagination.

Except when form affertion of confequence is advaneed, thefe little words, it is and there are, ought to be avoided, as redundant and enfechling. The two first words of this fentence therefore fhould have been omitted. The article prefixed to fancy and imagination ought alfo to have been omitted, fince he does not mean the powers of the fancy and the imagination, but the words only. The fentence fhould have run thus; " Few words " in the Englith language are employed in a more loofe " and uncircumforibed fenfe, than fancy and imagina-" tion."

I therefore thought it necessary to fix and determine the notion of the fe two words, as I intend to make use of them in the thread of my following speculations, that the reader may concrive rightly what is the fullyest which I proceed upon.

The words fix and determine, though they may appear fo, are not fynonymous. We fix, what is loofe; we determine, what is uncircumferibed. They may be viewed therefore, as applied here with peculiar delicacy.

The notion of thefe words is rather harfth, and is not 60 commonly uled, as the maning of thefe words. At 1 intend to make use of them in the thread of my fpeculations is evidently faulty. A fort of metaphor is improperly

#### CRITICAL EXAMINATION

136

mixed with words in their literal fenfe. The fubjest soluble I proceed upon is an ungraceful clofe of a femtence; it fhould have been the fubjest upon which I proceed.

I muft therefore defire him to remember, that by the pleafures of imagination, I mean only fuch pleafures as arife originally from fight, and that I divide these pleafures into two kinds.

This featence begins in a manner too fimilar to the preceding. I mean only fuch pleafures—the adverto only is not in its proper place. It is not intended here to qualify the verb mean, but fuch pleafures; and ought therefore to be placed immediately after the latter.

My defign being, first of all, to discarst of these primary pleafures of the imagination, which entirely present from fack objects as are before our eyes; and, in the next place, to fpeak of these [constray pleafures of the imagination, subich flows from the ideas of wijfile abjects, when the objects are not actually before the eye, but are called up into our memories, or formed into agreeable wiftons of things, that are either abject or faithing.

Neatnefs and brevity are peculiarly requifite in the divition of a fubjedt. This featnere is formewhat clogged by a tedious phrafeology. My dyfgn being firft of all it diffeorife—in the next place to florak off—fuch objects as are before cur eyet=-things that are either alf-int or faithious. OF MR. ADDISON'S STYLE. 137

Several words might have been omitted, and the ftyle made more neat and compact.

The pleafures of the imagination, taken in their full extent, are not fo grofs as those of fense, nor fo refined as those of the understanding.

This fentence is clear and elegant.

The laft are indeed more preferable, becaufe they are founded on fome new knowledge or improvement in the mind of man: Yet it mugh be confifted, that thole of the imagination are ar great and as transporting as the other.

The phrafe, more preferable, is fo palpable an inaccuracy, that we wonder how it could cleape the obfervation of Mr. Addion. The proposition, contained in the lass member of this featence, is neither clearly, nor eleganity expressed. It muss be confifted, that these of the imagination are as great, and as transporting as the other. In the beginning of this features he had called the pleatures of the understanding the lass 1 and he concludes with observing, that those of the imagination are as great and transporting, as the other. Befide that the other full, whether by the other are meant the pleasures of the understanding, or the pleasures of fense ; though without doubt it was intended to refer to the pleasures of the understanding only.

N 2

#### 138 CRITICAL EXAMINATION

A beautiful prospect delights the foul as much as a demonfiration ; and a description in Homer has charmed more readers than a chapter in Ariftotle.

This is a good illustration of what he had been afferting, and is expressed with that elegance, by which Mr. Addison is diftinguished.

Befides, the pleafures of the imagination have this advantage above those of the underflanding, that they are more obvious, and more easy to be acquired.

This fentence is unexceptionable.

It is but opening the eye, and the fcene enters ..

Though this is lively and picturesque; yet we mult remark a finall inaccuracy. A fiene cannot be faid to enter; an adder enters; but a feene appears, or prefent itfif.

The colours paint themfelves on the fancy, with very little attention of thought or application of mind in the beholder.

This is beautiful and elegant, and well fuited to those pleasures of the imagination, of which the author is treating.

We are final, we know not how, with the firmatry of any thing we fee ; and immediately effort to the leasts of an abj(R), without enquiring into the particular caufee and occaform of it.

### OF MR. ADDISON'S STYLE. 139

We affent to the truth of a proposition; but cannot with propriety be faid to affent to the beauty of an object. In the conclusion particular and occafions are fuperfluous words; and the pronoun it is in forme measure ambiguous.

A man of a polite imagination is let into a great many pleafures, that the vulgar are not capable of receiving.

The term *polite* is oftener applied to manners, than to the imagination. The ufe of *that* inflead of *which* is too common with Mr. Addifon. Except in cafes, where it is neceffary to avoid repetition, *which* is preferable to *that*, and is undoubtedly fo in the preferat inflance.

He can converfe with a pitture, and find an agreeable companion in a flatue. He meets with a fierer refrestment in a definition is and often feels a greater failafablin in the projetil of fields and meadways, than another does in the polifilien. It gives him, indeed, a kind of property in every thing he feet ; and makes the moft rude non-ultivated parts of nature a diminifer to his plasfares 28 of bat he looks upon the world, as it weres, in another light, and diffeovers in it a multitude of charm that conceal themfilves from the generality of mankind.

This featence is easy, flowing, and harmonious. We much however obferve a flight inaccuracy. It gives him a kind of property—to this it there is no antecedent in the whole paragraph. To different its connection, we

#### 140 CRITICAL EXAMINATION

muft look back to the third fentence preceding, which begins with a man of a polite imagination. This phrafe, polite imagination, is the only antecedent, to which it can refer; and even this is not a proper antecedent, fince it flands in the génitive cafe, as the qualification only of a man.

There are, indeed, but very few who know how to be idle and innocent, or have a relifh of any plaqures that are not criminal ; every diverfion they take, is at the expense of fome one wirtue or another, and their wery first flep out of bufinefs is into eviato or folly.

This fentence is truly elegant, mufical, and correct.

A man foould endeavour, therefore, to make the fiber of his innexent plaquees as wide as politle, that he may retireinto them with fafety, and find in them, fuch a faitifation as a wijk man woould not bligh to take.

This also is a good fentence, and exposed to no objestion.

Of this nature are those of the imagination, which do not require fach a bent of thought as is needfary to our more ferious employments; snor, at the fame time, faffer the mind to fink into that indoknee and remiffingft; which are apt to accomgany our more ferfual delight; is but, the a gentle exercise to the faculties, awaken them from floth and idlengfs, without paining them upon any labour or difficulty.

### OF MR. ADDISON'S STYLE. 141

The beginning of this fintence is incorrect. Of bit nature, fays he, are those of the imagination. It might be afked, of what nature? For the preceding fentence had not deforibed the nature of any clafs of pleafures. He had faid that it was every mans duty to make the fphere of his innocent pleafures as extending, cas polfible, that within this fphere he might find a fafe retreat and landable fatisfaction. The transfit on therefore is lookly made. It would have been better, if he had faid, "Chis " advantage we gain," or "This fatisfaction we enjoy," by means of the pleafures of the imagination. The reft of the fintence is correct.

We might here add, that the pleufures of the fancy are more conducive to bealth than thole of the underflanding, which are worked out by dint of thinking, and attended with too viohnt a labour of the brain.

Worked out by dint of thinking is a phrafe, which borders too nearly on the ftyle of common conversation, to be admitted into polithed composition.

Delighful femes, whether in nature, painting, or paetry, have a kindly influence on the body, as well as the mind, and not only free to clear and brighten the imagination, but are able to differfe grief and melancholy, and to fet the animal fjöritt in pleafing and agreeable motions. For this readon Sir Framin Bacon, in his Effay upon Health, has not thought it improper to proferible to his reader a form or a professed.

#### 142 CRITICAL EXAMINATION, &c.

where he particularly diffunder him from knotty and fubile diffuifiions, and advillations purfue fluctuat fill the mind with folendid and illuftrious objects, as biflories, fables, and contemplations of nature.

In the latter of these two periods a member is out of its place. Where he particularly diffuades him from knoty and fubile diffuisitions ought to precede has not thought it improper to preferible, Se.

I have in this paper, by way of introduction, finled the nation of those plasfures of the imagination, which are the fighted on yn perfent undertaking, and endacoward, by foreral confidentiation to recommend to my readers the purfuit of those plasfures ; I fhall in my next paper examine the feveral fouriest from wohene those plasfures are derived.

Thefe two concluding feateness furnish examples of proper collocation of circumilances. We formerly followed that it is difficult for to difpofe them, as not to embarrafs the principal fubjed. Had the following incidental circumilances, by away of introduction—by four all confideration—in this paper—in the next paper, been placed in any other fituation; the featence would have been neither fo neat, nor fo clear, as it is on the prefent confurction.

# ELOQUENCE. ORIGIN OF ELOQUENCE. GRECIAN ELOQUENCE. DEMOSTHENES.

ELOQUENCE is the art of persuasion. Its most effential requifites are folid argument, clear method, and an appearance of fincerity in the fpeaker, with fuch graces of ftyle and utterance, as command attention. Good fenfe must be its foundation. Without this no man can be truly eloquent ; fince fools can perfuade none, but fools. Before we can perfuade a man of fenfe, we must convince him. Convincing and perfuading, though fometimes confounded, are of very different import. Conviction affects the understanding only ; perfuafion the will and the practice. It is the bufinefs of a philosopher to convince us of truth ; it is that of an orator to perfuade us to act comformably to it by engaging our affections in its favor. / Conviction is however one avenue to the heart ; and it is that, which an orator must first attempt to gain ; for no perfuasion can be stable, which is not founded on conviction. But the orator muft not be fatisfied with convincing ; he muft addrefs himfelf to the paffions ; he must paint to the fancy, and touch the heart. Hence befide folid argument and clear method all the conciliating and interefting arts of composition and pronunciation enter into the idea of cloquence.

### ELOQUENCE.

Eloquence may be confidered, as confifting of three kinds or degrees. The first and lowest is that, which aims only to pleafe the hearers.) Such in general is the cloquence of panegyrios, inaugural orations, addreffes to great men, and other harangues of this kind. This ornamental fort of composition may innocently amule and entertain the mind; and may be mixed at the fame time with very ufeful fentiments. But it mult be acknowledged, that, where the speaker aims only to finine and to pleafe, there is great danger of art being strained into oftentation, and of the composition becoming tireforme and infpid.

The fecond degree of eloquence is, when the fpeaker aims, not merely to pleafe, but alfo to inform, to infruch, to convince i when his artis employed in removing prejudices againft himielf and his caufe; in felecting the most proper arguments, flating them with the greateft force, arranging them in the beft order, exprefiling and delivering them with propriety and beauty; thereby disposing us to pais that judgment, or favor that fide of the caufe, to which he feeks to bring us. Within this degree chiefly is employed the eloquence of the bar.

The third and highest degree of eloquence is that, by which we are not only convinced, but interefted, agitated, and carried along with the fpeaker; our pations offs with his; we fhare all his emotions; we love, we

\$44

#### ORIGIN OF ELOQUENCE. 14

hate, we refent, as he infpires us ; and are prompted to refolve, or to act, with vigor and warmth. / Debate in popular affemblies opens the moft extensive field to this frecies of eloquence ; and the pulpit allo admits it. /

(This high fpecies of cloquence is always the offspring of pation.) By pation we mean that flate of mind, in which it is agitated and fired by fome object in view./ Hence the univerfally acknowledged power of enthuliation in public fpeakers for affecting their audience. Hence (all fludied declamation and labored ornaments of flyle, which flow the mind to be cool and unmoved, are inconfiltent with perfualive cloquence. `Hence evry kind of affectation in gefture and pronunciation detracts for much from the weight of a fpeaker. Hence the neceffity of being, and of being believed to be, difinterefted and in earnelf, in order to perfuade.

In tracing the origin of cloquence it is not neceffary to go far back into the early ages of the world, or to fearch for it among the mountents of Ealtern or Exyptian antiquity. In those ages, it is true, there was a certain kind of cloquence; but it was more nearly allied to poetry, than to what we properly call oratory. While the intercourte of men was infrequent, and force was the principal mean, employed in deciding controverfus; the arts of ormory and perfusion, of reafoning and debate, could be little known. The first empires were of the defpoit; kind. A fingle perfor, or at

### GRECIAN ELOQUENCE.

146

moft a few, held the reins of government. The multitude were accultomed to blind obedience ; they were driven, not perfuaded. Confequently none of thofe refinements of fociety, which make public fpeaking an object of importance, were introduced.

Before the rife of the Grecian Republics we perceive no remarkable appearances of eloquence, as the art of perfuafion ; and these gave it fuch a field, as it never had Greece was divided into many little ftates. Thefe were governed at first by kings ; who being for their tyranny veurly upon the fame plan, animated by the fame high fpirit of freedom, mutually jealous, and rivals of each of every kind, but efpecially for eloquence. We fhall Not formed by nature either to pleafe or perfuade, he flruggled with, and furmounted, the moft formidable impediments. He that himfelf up in a cave, that he might fludy with lefs diffraction. He declaimed by the tuous afigmbly ; and with pebbles in his mouth, that he might correct a defect in his speech. He practifed at

#### DEMOSTHENES.

home with a naked fword hanging over his floulder, that he might check an ungraceful motion, to which he was fubject. Hence the example of this great man affords the higheft encouragement to every fludent of eloquence; fince it flows how far art and application availed for acquiring an excellence, which nature appeared willing to deny.

No orator had ever a finer field, than Demofthenes in his Olynthiacs and Philippics, which are his capital orations ; and undoubtedly to the greatness of the fubject, and to that integrity and public fpirit, which breathe in them, they owe much of their merit. The object is to roufe the indignation of his countrymen against Philip of Macedon, the public enemy of the liberties of Greece; and to guard them against the infidious measures, by which that crafty prince endeavoured to lay them afleep to danger. To attain this end, we fee him using every proper mean, to animate a people, diftinguithed by justice, humanity, and valor ; but in many initances become corrupt and degenerate. He boldly accufes them of venality, indolence, and indifference to the public caufe ; while at the fame time he reminds them of the glory of their anceitors, and of their prefent refources. His cotemporary orators, who\* were bribed by Philip, and perfuaded the people to peace, he openly reproaches, as traitors to their country. He not only prompts to vigorous measures, but lays down the plan of execution. His orations are frongly animated, and full of the impetuofity and fire of public fpirit. His composition is not diffinguified by ornament and fplendor. It is energy of thought, peculiarly his own, which forms his charafter, and fets him above all others. He ferms not to attend to words, but to things. We forget the crator, and think of the fubject. He has no parade; no fludied introductions; but is like a man full of his fubject, who after preparing his audience by a fentence or two for hearing plain truths enters directly on bufnets.

C The flyle of Demofthenes is ftrong and coneile ; though fometimes harfh and abrupt. His words are very expreflive, and his arrangement firm and manly ... Negligent of little graces, he aims at that fublime, which lies in fentiment. His action and pronunciation were uncommonly vehement and ardent. His character is of the auftere rather, than of the gentle kind. He. is always grave, ferious, paffionate ; never degrading himfelf, nor attempting any thing like pleafantry. If his admirable eloquence be in any respect faulty, it is in this, he fometimes borders on the hard and dry. He may be thought to want fmoothness and grace ; which is. attributed to his imitating too clofely the manner of Thucydides, who was his great model for ftyle, and whofe hiftory he transcribed eight times with his own hand. But these defects are more than compensated by

#### ROMAN ELOQUENCE.

that mafterly force of mafculine eloquence, which, as it overpowered all, who heard it, cannot in the prefent day be read without emotion.

## ROMAN ELOQUENCE, CICERO, MODERN ELOQUENCE.

AVING treated of eloquence among the Greeks, we now proceed to confider its progress among the Romans; where we shall find one model at least of eloquence in its most splendid form. The Romans derived their eloquence, poetry, and learning from the Greeks ; and were far inferior to them in genius for all these accomplishments. They had neither their vivacity. nor fenfibility ; their paffions were not fo eafily moved, por their conceptions fo lively ; in comparifon with them they were a phlegmatic people. Their language refembled their character ; it was regular, firm and flately ; but wanted that expressive fimplicity, that flexibility to fuit every different fpecies of composition, by which the Greek tongue is peculiarly diftinguished. Hence we always find in Greek productions more native genius ; in Roman more regularity and art.

As the Roman government, during the Republic, was of the popular kind, public fpeaking early became the mean of acquiring power and diffinetion. But in the unpolified times of the flate their fpeaking hardly de-

#### ROMAN ELOQUENCE.

ferved the name of eloquence. It was but a fhort time before the age of Cierro, that the Roman orators rofe into any reputation. Craffus and Antonius feem to have been the moft eminent; but, as none of their works are extant, nor any of Hortenfius's, who was Cicero's rival at the bar; it is not neceffary to tranfcribe, what Cierro faid of them, and of the chara@er of their eloquence.

The object, most worthy of our attention, is Cicero himfelf ; whole name alone fuggelts every thing fplendid in oratory. With his life and character in other refpects we are not at prefent concerned. We fhall view him, only as an eloquent fpeaker ; and endeavor to mark both his virtues and defects. His virtues are eminently great. In all his orations art is confpicuous. He begins commonly with a regular exordium, and with much address prepoficifies the hearers, and fludies to gain their affections. His method is clear, and his arguments arranged with great propriety. In clearnefs of method he has advantage over Demoshhenes. Every thing is in its proper place ; he never attempts to move, before he has endeavored to convince ; and in moving, particularly the fofter pallions, he is very fuccefsful. No one ever knew the force of words better, than Cicero. He rolls them along with the greatest beauty and pomp ; and in the fructure of his fentences is eminently curious and exact. He is always full and flowing ;

150

#### CICE RO.

never abrupt. He amplifies every thing ; yet, though his manner is on the whole diffule, it is often happily varied, and fuited to the fuljeft. When a great public object routed his mind, and demanded indignation and force ; he departs confiderably from that loofe and deelamatory manner, to which he at other times is addicked, and becomes very foreible and vehement.

This great orator however is not without defects. In molt of his orations there is too much art. He feems often defrous of obtaining admiration rather, than of operating conviction. He is fometimes therefore flowy rather, than folid; and diffufe, where he ought to be urgent. His periods are always round and fonorous; they cannot be accufed of monotony, for they pofiely variety of cadence; but from too great fondads for magnificence he is fometimes delicient in frengel. Though the fewices, which he performed for his country, were very confiderable; yet he is too much his own panegyrith. Antient manners, which impofed fewer reftraints on the fide of decorum, may in fome degree excels, but cannot entirely julify his vanity.

Whether DemoRhenes or Cicero were the molt perfeft orator is a quefiton, on which critics are not agreed. Fencion, the celebrated Archbithop of Cambray, and author of Telemaclus, feems to have flated their merits with grant julitics and periplicaity. His judgment is given in his reduction on Rhetoric and Potry. We

#### ROMAN ELOQUENCE.

fhall translate the passage, though not, it is feared, without lofing much of the fpirit of the original. " I do " not hefitate to declare," fays he, " that I think De-" mofthenes fuperior to Cicero. I am perfuaded, no " one can admire Cicero more, than I do. He adorns, " whatever he attempts. He does honor to language. " He difpofes of words in a manner peculiar to himfelf. " His ftyle has great variety of character. Whenever " he pleafes, he is even concife and vehement ; for in-" ftance, against Catiline, against Verres, against An-" thony. But ornament is too vifible in his writings, " His art is wonderful, but it is perceived. When the " orator is providing for the fafety of the Republic, he " forgets not himfelf, nor permits others to forget him. " Demosthenes feems to escape from himself, and to fee " nothing, but his country. He feeks not elegance of " expression ; unfought he possession it. He is superior " to admiration. He makes use of language, as a " modelt man does of drefs, only to cover him. He " thunders, he lightens. He is a torrent, which carries " every thing before it. We cannot criticife, becaufe " we are not ourfelves. His fubject enchains our atten-" tention, and makes us forget his language. We lofe " him from our fight ; Phillip alone occupies our "minds. I am delighted with both thefe orators ; but " I confess that I am less affected by the infinite art and " magnificent eloquence of Ciccro, than by the rapid " fimplicity of Demoßhenes."

152

The reign of eloquence among the Romans was very fhort. It expired with Gleero. Nor can we wonder at this, for liberty was no more, and the government of Rome was delivered over to a fuscefilon of the moft exervable tyrants, that ever difgrated and feourged the human race.

In the decline of the Roman Empire the introduction of Chriftianity gave rife to a new kind of eloquence in the apologies, fermons, and pafteral writings of the fathers. But none of them afforded very juft models of eloquence. Their language as foon, as we defeend to the third or fourth century, becomes harfh ; and they are generally infected with the tafle of that age, a love of fwollen and trained thoughts, and of the play of words.

As nothing in the middle ages deferves attention, we path now to the flate of eloquence in modern times. Here it mult be condified, that in no European nation public fpeaking has been valued folhighly, or cultivated with fo much care, as in Greece or Rome. The genius of the world appears in this refpect to have undergone fome alteration. The two countries, where we might expect to find most of the fpirit of eloquence, are France and Great Britain ; France on account of the diffinguined turn of its inhabitants toward all the liberal arts, and of the encouragement, which more than a century paß thefe arts have received from the public ; Great Britain on account of its free government, and

## 154 MODERN ELOQUENCE.

the liberal fpirit and genius of its people. Yet in neither of these countries has oratory rifen nearly to the degree of its antient splendor.

Several reafons may be given, why modern eloquence has been to confined and humble in its efforts. In the first place, it feems, that this change must in part be afcribed to that accurate turn of thinking, which has been fo much cultivated in modern times. Our public fpeakers are obliged to be more referved, than the antients, in their attempts to elevate the imagination, and warm the paffions ; and by the influence of prevailing tafte their own genius is chaftened perhaps in too great a degree. It is probable alfo, that we afcribe to our correctnefs and good fenfe, what is chiefly owing to the phlegm and natural coldness of our disposition. For the vivacity and fenfibility of the Greeks and Romans, efpecially of the former, feem to have been much fuperior to ours, and to have given them a higher relifh for all the beauties of oratory.

Though the Parliament of Great Britain is the nobleft field, which Europe at prefent affords to a public fpeaker; yet eloquence has ever been there a more feeble inftrument, than in the popular affemblies of Greece and Rome. Under fome foreign reigns the iron hand of arbitrary power checked its efforts; and in later times miniterial influence has generally rendered it of final importance. At the bar our differentiates

#### MODERN ELOQUENCE.

comparifon with the antients is great. Among them the judges were commonly numerous; the laws were few and fimple ; the decision of cauties was left in a great meafure to equity and the fenfe of mankind. Hence the field for judicial eloquence was ample. But at prefent the fyltem of law is much more complicated. The knowledge of it is rendered fo laborious, as to be the fludy of a mans life. Speaking is therefore only a fecondary accomplifhment, for which he has little leifore.

With refpect to the pulpit it has been a great difadvantage, that the practice of reading fermons inflead of repeating them has prevailed fo univerfailly in England. This indeed may have introduced accuracy ; but cloquence has been much enfeebled. Another circumflance too has been prejudicial. The fectures and farnatics before the Reitoration ufed a warm, zealons, and popular manner of preaching ; and their adherents afterward continued to dittinguilh themielves by fimilar ardor. Hattred of thefe fects drove the eltabilithed clurch into the oppofite extreme of a fludied coolnefs of exprelion. Hence from the art of perfuasion, which preaching onght ever to he, it has patied in England into mer readoning and infruction.

### ELOQUENCE OF POPULAR ASSEMBLIES.

T HE foundation of every fpecies of eloquence is good fenfe and folid thought. It fhould be the firft fludy of him, who means to addrefs a popular affembly, to be previoufly mafter of the bufinetic, on which he is to fpeak; to be well provided with matter and argument; and to reft upon thefe the chief frefs. This will give to his diffeourfe an air of manlinefs and friength, which is a powerful inftrument of perfuafion. Ornament, if he have genius for it, will fucceed of courfe; at any rate it deferves only feochdary regard.

To become a perfuadive fpeaker in a popular affembly, it is a capital rule, that a man fhould always be perfuaded of whatever he recommends to others. ] Never, if it can be avoided, thould he efpour that fide of an argument, which he does not believe to be the right. All high eloquence muft be the offspring of paffion. This makes every man perfuadive, and gives a force to his genius, which it cannot otherwife poffers.

Debate in popular affemblies feldom allows a fpeaker that previous preparation, which the pulpit always, and the bar formetimes, admits. A general prejudice prevails, and not an unjuft one, againft fet fpeeches in publie meetings. At the opening of a debate they may formetime be introduced with propriety but, as the

### ELOQUENCE OF POPULAR ASSEMBLIES. 157

debate advances, they become improper ; they lofe the appearance of being fuggefled by the bufinefs, that is going on. Study and oftentation are apt to be vilible; and confequently, though admired as elegant, they are feldom fo perfualive, as more free and unconfirained difecuries.

This however does not forbid premeditation, on what we intend to fpeak. With refpect to the matter we emnot be too accurate in our preparation ş but with regard to words and exprefilons it is very pollible fo far to overdo, as to render our fpeech ifif and precife. Short notes of the fublicance of the difcourfe are not only allowable, but of confiderable fervice, to thole efpecially, who are beginning to fpeak in public. They will teach them a degree of accuracy, which, if they fpeak frequently, they are in danger of lofing. They will accuftom them to diffind arrangement, without which eloquence, however great, cannot produce entire convidion.

Popular affemblies give fcope for the moft animated manner of public fpeaking. Paffion is cafily excited in a great affembly, where the movements are communicated by mutual fympathy between the orator and the audience. That ardor of fpeech, that vehemence and glow of femtiment, which proceed from a mind animated and infpired by fome great and public object, form the peculiar character of popular eloquence in its higheft degree of perfection.

#### ELOQUENCE OF

The warmth however, which we exprefs, muft be always fuited to the fubjed; j fince it would be ridiculous to introduce great vehemeiche into a fubjed? of final importance, or which by its nature requires to be treated with calmnsis. We muft allo be careful not to counterfeit warmth without feeling it. The belt rule is, to follow nature; and never to attempt a first of eloquence, which is not prompted by our own genius. A fpeaker may acquire reputation and influence by a calm, argumentative manner. To reach the pathetic and fubline of oratory requires thole ftrong fenfibilities of mind and that high power of exprefibion, which are given to few.

Even when vchemence is juftified by the fubjeft, and prompted by genius ; when warmth is folt, not feigned ; we mult be cautious, left impetuofity tranfport us too far. If the ipeaker lofe command of himfelf, he will from lofe command of his andience. He mult begin with moderation, and fludy to warm his hearers gradually and equally with himfelf. For, fi their pacfions be not in unition with his, the difford will foon be fels. Refpect for his audience flowld always lay a decent reitraint upon his warmth, and prevent it from carrying him beyond proper limits. When a fpeaker is fo far mafter of himfelf, as to preferve clofe attention to argument, and even to fome degree of accurate exprefion ; this felf command, this effort of reafon in the midd of pailon, contributes in the highelf degree both

158

#### POPULAR ASSEMBLIES.

to pleafe and to perfuade. The advantages of paffion are afforded for the purpoles of perfuation without that confution and diforder, which are its ufual attendants.

In the moft animated firain of popular fpeaking we mult always regard, what the public ear will receive without difguft.) Without attention to this imitation of antient orators might betray a fpeaker into a boldnefs of manner, with which the coolnefs of modern tafle would be difpleated. It is alfo needfary to attend with care to the decorume of time, place, and charafter. No ardor of eloquence can atone for neglect of thefs. No one fhould attempt to fpeak in public without forming to himfelf a juit and firth idea of what is fuitable to his age and charafter ; what is fuitable to the fuelace, the bearers, the place, and the occafion. On this idea he fhould adjuft the whole train and manner of his fpeak; ing.

What degree of concidents or diffudences is fuided to popular eloquence, it is not easy to determine with preciden. A diffude manner is generally confidered, as maß proper. There is danger however of erring in this refpect ; by too diffude a flyle public fpeakers often lofe more in point of flrength, than they gain by fulnets of illutration. Excetfive concidencts indeed muft be avoided. We mult explain and inculcate ; but conface ourdives within certain limits. We floudd never

forget that, however we may be pleafed with hearing ourfelves fpeak, every audience may be tired ; and the moment, they grow weary, our elequence becomes ufelefs. It is better in general, to fay too little, than too much ; to place our thought in one ftrong point of view, and reft it there, than by fhowing it in every light, and pouring forth a profution of words upon it, to exhauft the attention of our hearers, and leave them languid and fatigued.

## ELOQUENCE OF THE BAR.

HE ends of fpeaking at the bar and in popubar alkmbiles are commonly different. In the latter the orator aims principally to perfuade ; to determine his hearers to fome choice or conduct, as good, fit, or ufefal. He therefore applies himfelf to every principle of adio in our nature ; to the paffons and to the heart as well, as to the underflanding. But at the bar convicition is the principal objed. There the fpeaker's duty is not to perfuade the judges to what is good or ufeful, but to exhibit what is juft and true ; and confequently his elequence is chiefly addreffed to the underflanding.

At the bar speakers address themselves to one, or to a few judges, who are generally perfons of age, gravity, and dignity of character. There those advantages

which a mixed and numerous affembly affords for employing all the arts of fpeech, are not enjoyed. Paffion does not rife fo cafily. The fpeaker is heard with more coolnels; he is watched with more feverity; and would expofe himfelf to ridicule by attempting that high and vehement tone, which is fuited only to a multitude. Befide at the bar the field of fpeaking is confined within law and flatute. Imagination is fettered. The advocate has always before him the line, the fquare, and the compafs. Thefe it is his chief bufinels to be confantly applying to the fubjects under debate.

Hence the cloquence of the bar is of a much more limited, more fober, and chaftifed kind, than that of popular affemblies ; and confequently the judicial orations of the antients muft not be confidered, as exact models of that kind of fpeaking, which is adapted to the prefent ftate of the bar. With them ftrict law was much lefs an object of attention, than it is with us. In the days of Demosthenes and Cicero the municipal statutes were few, fimple, and general ; and the decifion of caufes was left in a great measure to the equity and common fenfe of the judges. Eloquence rather, than jurifprudence, was the fludy of pleaders. Cicero fays that three months study would make a complete civilian ; nay, it was thought that a man might be a good pleader without any previous fludy. Among the Romans there was a fet of men, called Pragmatici, whofe office it was to

fupply the orator with all the law knowledge, his caufe required; which he difpofed in that popular form, and decorated with those colors of eloquence, which were most fitted for influencing the judges.

It may also be observed, that the civil and criminal judges in Greece and Rome were more numerous, than with us, and formed a kind of popular affembly. The celebrated tribunal of the Areopagus at Athens confifted of fifty judges at leaft. In Rome the Judices Selecti were always numerous, and had the office and power of judge and jury. In the famous caule of Milo Cicero fpoke to fifty one Judices Selecti, and thus had the advantage of addreffing his whole pleading, not to one or a few learned judges of the point of law, as is the cafe with us, but to an affembly of Roman citizens. Hence those arts of popular eloquence, which he cmployed with fuch fuccefs. Hence certain practices, which would be reckoned theatrical by us, were common at the Roman bar ; fuch, as introducing not only the accused perfon dreffed in deep mourning, but prefenting to the judges his family and young children endeavouring to excite pity by their cries and tears.

The foundation of a lawyer's reputation and fuccefs muth be laid in a profound knowledge of his profettion If his abilities, as a fpeaker, be ever fo eminent ; yet, if his knowledge of the law be fuperficial, few will choose to engage him in their defence. Befide previous fludy

and an ample flock of acquired knowledge another thing, infeparable from the fuccefs of every pleader, is a diligent and painful attention to every caufe, with which he is intrufted; to all the fafts and circumflances, with which it is connected.) Thus he will in a great measure be prepared for the arguments of his opponent; and, being previoufly acquainted with the weak parts of his own caufe, he will be able to fortly them in the beft manner againft the attack of his adverfary.

Though the antient popular and vehement manner of pleading is now in a great measure superfeded, we must not infer that there is no room for eloquence at the bar, and that the fludy of it is fuperfluous. There is perhaps no fcene of public fpeaking, where eloquence is more requifite. The drynefs and fubtilty of fubjects, ufually agitated at the bar, require more, than any other, a certain kind of eloquence, in order to command attention; to give proper weight to the arguments employed ; and to prevent, what the pleader advances, from paffing unregarded. The effect of good fpeaking is always great. There is as much difference in the imprefion, made by a cold, dry, and confused speaker, and that made by one, who pleads the fame caufe with elegance, order, and ftrength ; as there is between our conception of an object, when prefented in twilight, and when viewed in the effulgence of noon.

Purity and neatnefs of expression is in this species of

eloquence chiefly to be fludied ; a flyle perfpicuous and proper, not needlefsly overcharged with the pedantry of law terms, nor affectedly avoiding thefe, when fuitable and requifite. Verbofity is a fault, of which men of this profession are frequently accused ; into which the habit of fpeaking and writing haftily, and with little preparation, almost unavoidably betrays them. It cannot therefore be too earneftly recommended to thofe, who are beginning to practife at the bar, that they early guard against this, while they have leifure for preparation. Let them form themfelves to the habit of a ftrong and correct ftyle ; which will become natural to them afterward, when compelled by multiplicity of bufinefs to compose with precipitation. Whereas, if a loofe and negligent flyle have been fuffered to become familiar; they will not be able even upon occafions, when they wish to make an unufual effort, to express themfelves with force and elegance.

Diffindnefs in fpeaking at the bar is a capital property. It fhould be fhown firl in flating the quefition ; in exhibiting clearly the point in debate ; what we admit; what we deny ; and where the line of divifion begins between us and the adverfe party. Next it fhould appear in the order and arrangement of all the parts of the pleading. A clear method is of the higheft confequence in every fpecies of oration; but in thofe intricate cafes, which belong to the bar, it is infinitely effential.)

#### ELOQUENCE OF THE BAR.

Narration of facts fhould always be as concife, as the nature of them will admit. They are always very neceffary to be remembered; confequently unneceffary minutenefs in relating them overloads the memory. Whereas, if a pleader omit all fuperfluous circumflances in his recital, he adds fitength to the material facts; gives a clearer view of what he relates, and makes the imprefilion of it more lafting. In argumentation however a more diffufe manner feems requifite at the bar, than on fome other occations. For in popular affembles, where the fubject of debate is often a plain queltion, arguments gain firength by concidencis. But the intricacy of law points frequently requires the arguments to be expanded, and placed in different lights, in order to be fully apprehended.

Candor in flating the arguments of his adverfary cannot be too much recommended to every pleader. If he difguile them, or place them in a fulle light, the artifice will foon be difcovered ; and the judge and the hearers will conclude, that he either wants difcernment to perceive, or fairnefs to admit the ftrength of his opponent's reafoning. But, if he flate with accuracy and candor the arguments ufed againft him, before he endeavour to comhat them, a ftrong prejudice is created in his favor. He will appear to have entire confidence in his caufe, fince he does not attempt to fupport it by artifice or concealment. The judge will

### 166 ELOQUENCE OF THE BAR.

therefore be inclined to receive more readily the impreffions, made upon him by a fpeaker, who appears both fair and penetrating.

Wit may fometimes be ferviceable at the bar, particularly in a lively reply, by which ridicule is thrown on what an adverfary has advanced. But a young pleader fhould never reft his flrength on this dazzling talent. His office is not to excite laughter, but to produce convicition; nor perhaps did any one ever rife to eminence in his profession by being a witty lawyer.

Since an advocate perfonates his client, he muft pleadhis cauties where of proper degree of warmth. He muft be cautious however of profituting his earnelnefs and fenfibility by an equal degree of ardor on every fubjed. There is a dignity of character, which it is highly important for every one of this profefilion to fupport. An opinion of probity and honor in a pleader is his mold powerful inftrument of perfuafion. He fhould always therefore decline embarking in caufes, which are odious and manifelly unjult ; and, when he fupports a doubful caufe, he fhould lay the chief ftrefs upon thofe arguments, which appear to him to be moft forcible ; referving his zeal and indignation for cafes, where injuffice and iniquity are flagrant.

AVING treated of the eloquence of popular affemblies, and of that of the bar, we shall now confider the strain and spirit of that eloquence, which is fuited to the pulpit. This field of public fpeaking has feveral advantages peculiar to itfelf. The dignity and importance of its fubjects must be allowed to be superior to any other. They admit the higheft embellifhment in defcription, and the greatest warmth and vehemence of expression. In treating his subject the preacher has alfo peculiar advantages. He fpeaks not to one or a few judges, but to a large affembly. He is not afraid of interruption. He chooses his subject at leifure ; and has all the affiltance of the most accurate premeditation. The difadvantages however, which attend the eloquence of the pulpit, are not inconfiderable. The preacher, it is true, has no contention with an adverfary ; but debate awakens genius, and excites attention. His fubjects, though noble, are trite and common. They are become fo familiar to the public ear, that it requires no ordinary genius in the preacher to fix attention. Nothing is more difficult, than to beftow on what is common the grace of novelty. Belide the fubject of the preacher ufually confines him to abstract qualities, to virtues and vices ; whereas that of other popular fpeakers leads them to treat of perfons ; which is generally more interefting to the heavers, and occupies more powerfully

the imagination. We are tanght by the preacher to deteft only the crime; by the pleader to deteft the criminal. Hence it happens that, though the number of moderately good pleachers is great, fo few have arrived at eminence. Perfection is very diftant from modern preaching. The object however is truly noble, and worthy of being purfued with zeal.

To excel in preaching, it is neceffary to have a fixed and habitual view of its object. This is to perfuade men to become good. Every fermon ought therefore to be a perfualive oration.] It is not to difcuft fome abftruſe point, that the preacher afcends the pulpit. It is not to teach his hearers fomething new, but to make them better ; to give them at once clear views and perfualve imprefiloss of religious truth.

The principal characterifies of pulpit eloquence, as diffunguifhed from the other kinds of public lepeaking, appear to be thefe two, gravity and warmth. It is neither eafy, nor common to unite thefe characters of eloquence. The grave, when it is predominant, becomes a duall, uniform folemnity. The warm, when it wants gravity, borders on the light and theatrical. A proper union of the two forms that character of preaching, which the French call Outlion; i that affecting, penterting, and interefing manner, which flows from a flrong femfe in the preacher of the importance of the truths, he delivers, and an cameft defire, that they may make full imprefilon on the hearts of his hearers.

A fermon, as a particular species of composition, requires the frictest attention to unity. By this we mean that there should be some main point, to which the whole tenor of the fermon shall refer. It must not be a pile of different fubjects heaped upon each other ; but one object muft predominate through the whole. Hence however it must not be understood, that there should be no divisions or separate heads in a discourse ; nor that one fingle thought only fhould be exhibited in different points of view. Unity is not to be underftood in fo limited a fenfe ; it admits fome variety ; it requires only that union and connection be fo far preferved, as to make the whole concur in fome one impreffion on the mind. Thus, for inftance, a preacher may employ feveral different arguments, to enforce the love of God ; he may also inquire into the causes of the decay of this virtue ; ftill one great object is prefented to the mind. But, if becaufe his text fays, "He, that loveth God, muft love " his brother alfo," he fhould therefore mix in the fame difcourse arguments for the love of God and for the love of our neighbour ; he would großly offend against unity, and leave a very confuded imprefilon on the minds of his heavers.

Sermons are always more flitking, and generally more uteful, the more precife and particular the fulject of them is. Unity can never be for perfect in a general, as in a particular fulject. General fuljects indeed,

fuch, as the excellency or the pleafures of religion, are often chofen by young preachers, as the moft flowy, and the caffed to be handled ; but their fubjects produce not the high effects of preaching. Attention is much more commanded by taking force particular view of a great fubject, and employing on that the whole force of argument and cloquence. To recommend fome one virtue, or inveigh againft a particular vice, affords a fubject not deficient in unity or precifion. But, if that virtue or vice be confidered, as affuming a particular afpect in certain characters, or certain fituations in life ; the fubject becomes fill more interefung. The execution is more difficult, but the merit and the effect are higher.

A preacher fhould be cautious not to eithauft his fubjedt 5 fince nothing is more oppofite to perfusion, than unneedfary and tedious fulnefs. There are always fome things, which he may fuppole to be known, and fome, which require only brief attention. If he endeavour to omit nothing, which his fubjed fuggedts; he mait anavoidably encumber it, and diminih its force.

To render his infrations intereffing to his hearers fhould be the grand object of every preacher. He fhould bring home to their hearts the truths, which he inculcates; and make each fuppole himfolf particularly addreffed. He fhould avoid all intricate reafonings; a avoid exprelling himfelf in general, fpeculative propolitions;

or laying down practical truths in an abftraß, metaphyfical manner. A difcourfe ought to be carried on in the frain of direct addrefs to the audience / not in the flrain of one writing an effay, but of one fpeaking to a multitude, and fludying to connecî, what is called application, or what immediately refers to practice, with the dofrinal parts of the fermon.

It is always highly advantageous to keep in view the different ages, characters, and conditions of men, and to accommodate directions and exhortations to each of these different classes.) Whenever you advance, what touches a mans character, or is applicable to his circumftances, you are fure of his attention. No ftudy is more neceffary for a preacher, than the fludy of human life, and of the human hcart. To difcover a man to himfelf in a light, in which he never faw his character bcfore, produces a wonderful effect. Those fermons, though the most difficult in composition, are not only the most beautiful, but also the most useful, which are founded on the illustration of fome peculiar character, or remarkable piece of hiftory, in the facred writings ; by purfuing which we may trace, and lay open, fome of the most fccret windings of the human heart. Other topics of preaching are become trite; but this is an extensive field, which hitherto has been little explored, and posses all the advantages of being curious, new, and highly ufeful. Bifhop Butler's fermon on the char. after of Bulaam is an example of this kind of preaching.

#### INTRODUCTION.

Fashion, which operates fo extensively on human manners, has given to preaching at different times a change of character. This however is a torrent, which fwells to day, and fubfides to morrow. Sometimes poetical preaching is fashionable ; fometimes philosophical. At one time it must be all pathetic ; at another all argumentative ; as fome celebrated preacher has fet the example. Each of thefe modes is very defective ; and he, who conforms himfelf to it, will both confine and corrupt his genius. Truth and good fenfe are the fole bafis, on which he can build with fafety. Mode and humor are feeble and uniteady. No example should be fervilely imitated. From various examples the preacher may collect materials for improvement ; but fervility of imitation extinguishes all genius, or rather proves entire want of it.

CONDUCT OF A DISCOURSE IN ALL ITS PARTS. INTRODUCTION, DIVISION, NARRATION, AND EXPLICATION.

HAVING already confidered, what is peculiar to each of the three great fields of public fpeaking, popular alfemblies, the bar, and the pulpit; we fhall now treat of what is common to them all, and explain the conduct of a difcourfe or oration in general.

The parts, which compose a regular oration, are these

172

fit ; the ecordium or introduction ; the flate or the division of the fubject ; narration or explication ; the reafoning or arguments ; the pathetic part ; and the conclufion.) It is not neceffary, that each of thefe enter into every public difcourfe, nor that they always enter in this order. There are many excellent difcourfes, in which fome of thefe parts are omitted. But, as they are the conditiuent parts of a regular oration ; and as in every difcourfe fome of them mult occur ; it is agreeable to our prefent purpofe, to examine each of them diffindly.

( The defign of the introduction is to conciliate the good will of the hearers; to excite their attention; and to render them open to perfuadion.) When a fpeaker is previoufly fecure of the good will, attention, and docility of his audience; a formal introduction may be omitted. Refpect for his hearers will in that cafe require only a flort exordium, to prepare them for the either parts of his difcourfe.

The introduction is a part of a difcourfe, which requires no fmall care. It is always important to begin well; to make a favorable imprefine at firld fetting out, when the minds of the hearers, as yet vacant and free, are more eafily prejudiced in favor of the fpeaker. We mult add allo, that a good introduction is frequently found to be extremely difficult. Few parts of a diffcourfe give more trouble to the compofer, or require more delicary in the execution.

#### INTRODUCTION.

<sup>1</sup> An introduction flouid be eafy and natural. It flouid always be fuggetted by the fullyed. The writer flouid not plan it, before he has mediated in his own mind the fubfrance of his difcourfe.<sup>1</sup> By taking the oppofite courfe, and composing in the first place an introduction, the writer will often find that he is either led to lay hold of fome commonplace topic, or that inflead of the introduction being accommodated to the difcourfe he is under the neceffity of accommodating the difcourfe to the introduction.

In this part of a diffourfe correftnefs of expression fhould be carefully fludied. / This is peculiarly requifite on account of the fituation of the hearers. At the beginning they are more difpofed to criticife, than at any other period ; they are then occupied by the fubjeft and the arguments ; their attention is entirely direflect to the fpeaker's flyle and manner. Care therefore is requirint, to prepofiels them in his favor ; though too much art muft be cautionly avoided, fince it will then be more eafily detected, and will derogate from that perfuasion, which the other parts of the difcourfe are intended to produce.

Modefty is also an indifpensible characteristic of a good introduction. If the fpeaker begin with an air of arrogance and oftentiation, the felf love and pride of his hearers will be prefently avakened, and follow him with a very futificious see through the reft of his difcourse. (His modely flould appear not only in his erprefilm, but in his whole manner ; in his looks, in his gettures, and in the tone of his voice.) Every audience is pleafed with those marks of refpect and awe, which are paid by the fpeaker. The modely however of an introduction fhould betray nothing mean or abject. Together with modelty and deference to his hearers the orator fhould flow a certain fense of dignity, anting from perfuasion of the justice or importance of his fubject.

Particular cafes excepted, the orator fhould not put forth all his frength at the beginning ; but it fhould rife and grow upon his hearers, as his difcourfe advances. The introduction is feldom the place for vehemence and paffion. The audience must be gradually prepared, before the fpeaker venture on ftrong and paffionate fentiments. Yet, when the fubject is fuch, that the very mention of it naturally awakens fome paffionate emotion ; or when the unexpected prefence of fome perfon or object in a popular affembly inflames the fpeaker ; either of thefe will justify an abrupt and vehement exordium. Thus the appearance of Catiline in the Senate renders the violent opening of Cicero's first oration against him very natural and proper. " Quo-" ufque tandem, Catalina, abutere patientia noftra ?" Bifhop Atterbury, preaching from this text, " Eleffed " is he, whofoever fhall not be offended in me," ventures on this bold exordium ; " And can any man then

#### INTRODUCTION.

"be offended in thee, bleffed Jefus ?" Which addrefs to our Saviour he continues, till he enters on the division of his fubject. But fuch introductions flould be attempted by very few, fince they promife fo much vehemence and ardor through the reft of the difcourfe, that it is extremely difficult to fatisfy the expectation of the hearers.

An introduction thould not anticipate any material part of the fubject. When topics or arguments, which are afterward to be enlarged upon, are hinted at, and in part exhibited in the introduction ; they lofe upon their fecond appearance the grace of novelty. The imprefilion, intended to be made by any capital thought, is always made with greateft advantage, when it is made entire, and in its proper place.

(An introduction fhould be proportioned in length and kind to the difcourie, which follows it.) In length, as nothing can be more abfurd, than to erect a large portico before a finall building ; and in kind, as it is no lefs abfurd to load with fuperb ornaments the portico of a plain dwellinghoufs; or to make the approach to a monument as gay, as that to an arbor.

After the introduction the proposition, or enunciation of the fuljed, commonly fucceds; concerning which we shall only obferve, that it flould be clear and diffind, and expressed without affectation in the most concile and implemanner. To this generally fuc-

176

#### DIVISION.

ceeds the division, or laying down the method of the difcourse fin the management of which the following rules should be carefully observed.

First The parts, into which the fubject is divided, muß be really difinct from each other.) It were an abfurd division, for example, if a fpeaker should propose to explain first the advantages of virtue, and next those of justice or temperance; because the first head plainly comprehends the second, as a genus does the species. Such a method of proceeding involves the fubject in confusion.

Secondly (We muft be careful always to follow the order of nature ; beginning with the molt fumple points ; with fuch, as are moft cafily underflood, and neceffary to be first difcuffed ; and proceeding to thofe, which are built upon the former, and fuppofe them to be known. ) The fubject muft be divided into thofe parts, into which it is moft cafily and naturally refolved.

Thirdly, [The members of a division ought to exhault the fubject; a otherwise the division is incomplete;] the fubject is exhibited by pieces only without difplaying the whole.

(Fourthly, Let concilences and presision be peculiarly Audied. A division always appears to most advantage, when the faveral heads are expression in the clearels, most forcible, and feweft words politike.] This per-

## 178 NARRATION OR EXPLICATION.

er fails to ftrike the hearers agreeably ; and contributes allo to make the divisions more eafily remembered.

 [ Fifully, Unneceffary multiplication of heads fhould be cautioufly avoided. I To divide a fubject into many minute parts by endlefs divisions and fubdivitions pro- duces a bad effect in fpeaking. In a logical treatific his may be proper; but it renders an oration hard and dry, and unneceffarly fatigues the memory. A fer- mon may admit from three to five or fix heads, includ-ing fubdivitions; feldom are more allowable.

The next conflituent part of a difcourfe is narration or explication.) Thefe two are joined together, becaufe they fall nearly under the fame rules, and becaufe they generally anfwer the fame purpole; ferving to illuftrate the caufe, or the fubject, of which one treats, before proceeding to argue on one fide or the other; or attempting to intereft the pations of the hearers.

[ To be clear and diffind; to be probable, and to be concife, are the qualities, which critics chiefly require in marration.] Diffindencies require to the whole of the diffeourfe, but belongs efpecially to narration, which ought to throw light on all that follows. At the bar a fact, or a fingle circumfance, left in obfcurity, or mitunderflood by the judge, may deftroy the effect of all the argument and reasioning, which the pleader employs. If his narration be improbable, it will be diffegarded; if it be tedious and diffuce, it will facing eard

## NARRATION OR EXPLICATION. 179

be forgotten. (To render narration diffinet, particular attention is requifite in afcertaining clearly the names, dates, places, and every other important circumflance of the facts recounted. In order to be probable in narration, it is neceffary to exhibit the characters of the perfons, of whom we fpeak, and to fhow that their actions proceeded from fuel motives, as are natural, and likely to gain belief. To be as concife, as the fubject will admit, all fuperfluous circumflances muft be rejected; by which the narration will be rendered more forcible and more clear,

In fermons explication of the fubject, to be difcourfed on, occupies the place of narration at the bar, and is to be conducted in a fimilar manner. It must be concife, clear, and diffinct ; in a ftyle correct and elegant rather, than highly adorned. / To explain the doctrine of the text with propriety ; to give a full and clear account of the nature of that virtue or duty, which forms the fubject of difcourfe, is properly the didactic part of preaching ; on the right execution of which much depends. In order to fucceed, the preacher must meditate profoundly on the fubject ; fo, as to place it in a clear and striking point of view. He must confider, what light it may derive from other paffages of feripture ; whether it be a fubject nearly allied to fome other, from which it ought to be diftinguished ; whether it can be advantageoufly illustrated by comparing, or opposing it to fome other thing ; by fearching into

## 180 THE ARGUMENTATIVE PART

caufes, or tracing effects; by pointing out examples, or appealing to the hearts of the hearers; that thus a precife and circumftantial view may be afforded of the doornine inculeated. App diffind and aptilluftrations of the known truths of religion a preacher may both difplay great merit, as a compofer; and, what is infinitely more valuable, render his difcourfes weighty, inftrudive; and ufeful a

## THE ARGUMENTATIVE PART OF A DIS-COURSE, THE PATHETIC PART, AND THE PERORATION.

AS the great end, for which men fpeak on any forious occafion, is to convince their hearers, that fomething is true, or right, or good ; and thus to influence their practice f reason and argument mult confluence the foundation of all manly and perfualive eloquence.

With regard to arguments three things are requifite. First, invention of them; a fecendly, proper diffofition and arrangement of them; and thirdly, expretfing them in the most farctible manner. Juvention is undoubtedly the most material, and the bails of the reft. But in this art can afford only fmall adlitance. It can aid a fpeaker however in arranging and expreffing those arguments, which his knowledge of the fubleO hard differented.

#### OF A DISCOURSE.

Supposing the arguments properly chosen, we muft avoid blending those together, that are of a feparate nature. All arguments whatever are intended to prove one of these three things; that fomething is true; that it is right or fit; or that it is profitable and good. Truth, duty, and intereft are the three great fubjects of discuffion among men. But the arguments employed upon either of them are generally diffinct; and he, who blends them all under one topic, which he calls his argument, as in fermons is too frequently done, will render his reafoning indiffunct and inelegant.

With refpect to the different degrees of firength in arguments the common rule is to advance in the way of climar from the weaked to the most foreble. This method is recommended, when the fpeaker is convinced, that his caule is clear, and es/y to be proved. But this rule mail not be univerfully objerved. If he diffruit his caufe, and have but one material argument, it is often proper to place this argument in the front; to prejudice his hearer's early in his favor, and thus difjoct them to pay attention to the weaker reafons, which he may afterward introduce. When amid a variety of arguments there is one or two more feeble, than the reft, though proper to be ufed; Ciccero advites to place them in the middle, as a fituation lefs confpicuous, than either the beginning or end of the train of realoning.

## THE PATHETIC PART

When arguments are firong and fatisfactory, the more they are feparated, the better, [Each can then bear to be introduced alone, placed in its full light, amplified and contemplated. But, when they are of a doubtful or prefumptive nature, it is fafer to crowd them together, to form them into a phalanx, that, though individually weak, they may mutually fupport each other.]

Arguments fhould never be extended too far, nor multiplied too much. This ferves rather to render a caufe fufpicious, than to increade its ftrength. A needlafs multiplicity of arguments burdens the memory, and diminifhes the weight of that conviction, which a few well chofen arguments produce. To expand them alfo beyond the kounds of reafonable illuftration is always enfecting. When a freaker endeavours to expofe a favorable argument in every light pollible, fatigued by the effort, he lofes the fpirit, with which he fet out; and ends with feeblenefs, what he began with force.

Having attended thus far to the proper arrangement of arguments, the proceed to another effential part of a dicourfe, the pathetic; i ni which, if any where, eloquence reigns, and exerts its power. On this head the sollowing directions appear ufeful.

Confider carefully, whether the fubject admit the pathetic, and render it proper; and, if it do, what part

182

of the difcourfe is molt fit for it. To determine thefe points belongs to good fenfe. Many fubjects admit not the pathetic; and even in thofe, that are fufceptible of it, an attempt to excite the paffions in a wrong place, may expofe an orator to ridicule. It may in general be obferved, that, if we expect any emotion, which we raife, to have a lafting effect, we mult fecure in our favor the underflamding and judgment. The hearers mult be fatisfied, that there are fufficient grounds for their engaging in the caufe with zeal and ardor. When argument and reafoning have produced their full effect, the pathetic is admitted with the greateft force and propriety.

A fpeaker fhould cautionfly avoid giving his hearers warning, that he intends to excite their paffons. Every thing of this kind chills their fentibility. There is allo a great difference between telling the heares that they ought to be moved, and adually moving them. To every emotion or paffion nature has adapted certain corresponding objects; and without fetting thefe before the mind it is impofible for an orator to excite that emotion. We are warmed with gratitude, we are touched with compafiton, not when a fpeaker hows us that thefe are noble dispositions, and that it is our duty to feel them; nor when he exclains againfu us for our indifference and coldness. Hitherto he has addrefied only our reasion or conficience. He muid definite the kindneds and tenderneis of our filend 1.

#### THE PATHETIC.

he muft exhibit the diffred, fuffered by the perfon, for whom he would intereft us. Then, and not before, our hearts begin to be touched, our gratitude or compatifion begins to flow. (The bafis therefore of all fuccelsful execution in pathetic oratory is to paint the object of that paffion, which we defire to raife, in the moft natural and firking manner; to deferibe it with fuch circumflances, as are likely to awaken it in the minds of others.

To fucceed in the pathetic, it is necessary to attend to the proper language of the paffions. This, if we confult nature, we fhall ever find is unaffected and fimple. It may be animated by bold and firong figures, but it will have no ornament, nor finery. There is a great difference between painting to the imagination and to the heart. The one may be done with deliberation and coolnefs ; the other must always be rapid and ardent. In the former art and labor may be fuffered to appear; in the latter no proper effect can be produced, unlefs it be the work of nature only. Mence all digreffions fhould be avoided, which may interrupt or turn afide the fwell of paffion. Hence comparifons. are always dangerous, and commonly quite improper in the midft of the pathetic. It is also to be observed, that violent emotions cannot be lafting. The pathetic thereføre fhould not be prolonged too much. | Due regard fhould always be preferved to what the hearers

184

#### THE PERORATION.

will bear; for h:, who attempts to carry them farther in paffion, than they will follow him, fruftrates his purpole. By endeavoring to warm them too much he takes the furefit method of freezing them completely.

Concerning the peroration or conclution of a difcourie a few words will be fufficient. Sometimes the whole pathetic part comes in molt properly at the conclution. Sometimes, when the difcourie has been altogether argumentative, it is proper to conclude with furming up the arguments, placing them in one view, and leaving the imprefition of them full and ftrong on the minds of the hearers. For the great rule of a conclution, and what nature obvioufly fuggefts, is, place that laft, on which you choose to reft the ftrength of your caule.

In every kind of public fpeaking it is important to hit the precife time of concluding; to bring the difcourte juft to a point; j neither ending abruptly and unexpectedly, nor difappointing the expectation of the hearers, when they look for the end of the difcourfe. The fpeaker fhould always clofe with dignity and fpirit, that the minds of the hearers may be left warm, and that they may depart with a favorable imprefilion of the fubject and of himfelf. ()

R 2

HE great objects, to which every public fpeaker fhould direct his attention in forming his delivery, are, Firlt, to fpeak io, as to be fully and eafily underflood by his hearers ; and next, to express himfelf with fuch grace and energy, as to please and to move them.]

To be fully and eafily underftood, the chief requifites are a due degree of loudne's of voice, diffinities, flowness, and propriety of pronunciation.

To be heard is undoubtedly the first requisite. The fpcaker must endeavor to fill with his voice the space, occupied by the affembly. Though this power of voice is in a great measure a natural talent, it may receive confiderable affiltance from art. Much depends on the proper pitch and management of the voice. Every man has three pitches in his voice ; the high, the middle, and the low. The high is used in calling aloud to fome one at a distance ; the low approaches to a whifper ; the middle is that, which is employed in common conversation, and which should generally be used in. public fpeaking. )For it is a great error, to fuppofe that the highest pitch of the voice is requisite, to be well heard by a great affembly. This is confounding two things materially different, loudness or strength of found with the key or note, on which we fpeak. The voice may be rendered louder without altering the key ; and

the fpeaker will always be able to give most body, most perfevering force of found, to that pitch of voice, to which in conversation he is accustomed. Whereas, if he begin on the higheft key, he will fatigue himfelf, and fpeak with pain ; and, wherever a man fpeaks with pain to himfelf, he is always heard with pain by his audience. Give the voice therefore full ftrength and fwell of found ; but always pitch it on your ordinary fpeaking key : a greater quantity of voice fhould never be uttered, than can be afforded without pain, and without any extraordinary effort. To be well heard, it is ufeful for a fpeaker to fix his eye on fome of the most distant perfons in the alembly, and to confider himfelf, as fpeaking to them. We naturally and mechanically utter our words with fuch firength, as to be heard by one, to whom we address ourfelves, provided he be within the reach of our voice. This is the cafe in public fpeaking as well, as in common conversation. But it must be remembered, that fpeaking too loudly is peculiarly offenfive. The ear is wounded, when the voice comes upon it in rumbling, indiffinct maffes ; befide it appcars, as if affent were demanded by mere vehemence and force of found.

To being well heard and clearly underftood diffinenets of articulation is more conducive perhaps, than mere loadnefs of found. The quantity of found, requifite to fill even a large fpace, is lefs, than is commonly fuppofed ; with diditing articulation a man of a

weak voice will make it extend farther, than the ftrongeft voice can reach without it. This therefore demands peculiar attention. The fpeaker muft give every found its due proportion, and make every fyllable, and even every letter, be heard diffinctly. To fucceed in this. rapidity of pronunciation must be avoided. A lifelefs, drawling method however is not to be indulged. Topronounce with a proper degree of flownefs and with full and clear articulation cannot be too industriously ftudied, nor too earneftly recommended. Such pronunciation gives weight and dignity to a difcourfe. It affifts the voice by the paufes and refts, which it allows it more eafily to make; and it enables the fpeaker to fwell all his founds with more energy and more mulic; It affifts him also in preferving a due command of himfelf ; whereas a rapid and hurried manner excites. that flutter of fpirits, which is the greatest enemy to all right execution in oratory.

To propriety of pronunciation nothing is more conducive, than giving to every word, which we utter, that found, which the mol polite ufage appropriates to it, in oppofition to broad, valgar, or provincial pronunciation. On this fulject however written influredions avail nothing. But there is one obfervation, which it may be ufeful to make. In our language every word of more fyllables, than one, has one accented fyllable. The genius of the language requires the voice to mark that fyllable by a fironger percuffion, and to pais more

fightly over the reft. The fame accent thould be given to every word in public speaking and in common difcourse. Many perfonser in this refpect. When they speak in public and with folemnity, they pronounce differently from what they do at other times. They dwell upon fyllables, and protract them; they multiply accents on the fame word from a falk idea, that it gives gravity and force to their difcourse, and increases the pomp of public declamation. But this is one of the greateft faults, which can be committed in pronunciation; it conditates, what is termed a theatrical or mouthing manner; and gives an artificial, affected air to speech, which detracts greatly from its agreeablenefs and its imprefilon.

We fhall now treat of those higher parts of delivery, by fludying which a fpeaker endeavors not merely to render himfelf intelligible, but to give grace and force to what he utters. These may be comprehended under four heads, emphafis, paules, tones, and geflures.

By emphasis is meant a fuller and ftronger found of voice, by which we diffinguish the accented fyllable of fome word, on which we intend to lay particular firefs, and to flow how it affeds the reft of the fantence. /To acquire the proper management of emphafits the only rule is, fludy to acquire a juft conception of the force and fpirit of those featiments, which you are to deliver. ) In all prepared discourts it would be ex-

tremely ucful, if they were read over or rehearded in private, with a view of afeertaining the proper emphatics, before they were pronounced in public; marking at the fame time the emphatical words in every fentence, or at leaft in the moft important parts of the difcourde, and fixing them well in memory. A caution however muß be given againft multiplying emphatical words too much. They become firking, only when ufed with pradent referve. If they recur too frequently; if a fpeaker attempt to render every thirg, which he fays, of high importance by a multitude of flrong emphafes; they will foon fail to excite the attention of his hearers.

Next to emphafic paufes demand attention. They are of two kinds; firft, emphatical paufes; and fecondly, fuch, as mark the diffinitions of fenfe. An emphatical paufe is made, after fomething has been fail of peculiar moment, on which we with to fix the hearer's attention. Scometimes a matter of importance is preceded by a paufe of this nature. Such paufes have the fame rules; effecially to the caution, juft now given, of not repeating them too frequently. For, as they excite uncommon attention, and confequently raife expectation, if this be not fully anfwered, they occafion difappointment and diguft.

But the most frequent and the principal use of pauses

is, to mark the divitions of the fenfs, and at the fame time to permit the fpeaker to draw his breath ; and the proper management of fuch paules is one of the molt nice and difficult articles in delivery. A proper command of the breath is peculiarly requifite. To obtain this, every fpeaker fhould be very careful to provide a full fupply of breath for what he is to utter. It is a great niflake, to fuppofe that the breath mult be drawn only at the end of a period, when the voice is allowed to fall. It may cafily be gathered at the intervals of a period, when the voice fuffers only a momentary fuffenfion. By this management a fufficient fupply may be obtained for carrying on the longeft period without improper interruptions.

Paules in public difcourfe mult be formed upon the manner, in which we express ourfelves in tenfible convertation, and not upon the fliff, attitacial manner, which we acquire from perufing books according to common punduation. Pundtaation in general is very aptitrary; of otne apricious and fulfe; difdating a uniformity of tone in the paules, which is extremely unpleafing. For it mult be obferved, that, to render paules graceful and exprefilve, they mult not only be made in the right places, but allo be accompanied by proper tones of voice; by which the nature of thefe paules is intimated much more, than by their length, which can never be eracfly meafured. Sometimes on-

1y a flight and fimple furfiention of the voice is proper; fometimes a degree of cadence is requisite; and fometimes that peculiar tone and cadence, which mark the conclusion of a period. In all these cases a flexater is to regulate himself by the manner, in which he speaks, when engaged in earnelt diffeourfe with others.

In reading or reciting verfe there is a peculiar difficulty in making the paufes with propriety. There are two kinds of paufes, which belong to the mulic of verfe; one at the end of a line, and the other in the middle of it. Rhyme always renders the former fenfible, and compels observance of it in pronunciation. In blank verfe it is lefs perceivable ; and, when there is no fufpenfion of the fenfe, it has been doubted, whether in reading fuch verfe any regard should be paid to the close of a line ? On the ftage indeed, where the appearance of fpeaking in verse should be avoided, the clofe of fuch lines, as make no paule in the fenfe, fhould not be rendered perceptible to the ear. On other occasions we ought for the fake of melody to read blank verfe in fuch manner, as to make each line fenfible to the ear. In attempting this however every appearance of fingfong and tone muft be cautioufly avoided. The close of a line, where there is no paufe in the meaning, fhould be marked only by fo flight a faspension of found, as may diffinguish the passage from one line to another without injuring the fenfe.

(The paufe in the middle of the line falls after the 4th, 5th, 6th, or 7th fyllable, and no other.) When this paufe coincides with the flighteft divifion in the fenfe, the line may be read with eafe; as in the two firft verfes of Pope's Meffiah;

Ye nymphs of Solyma, begin the fong, To heavenly themes fublimer flrains belong.

But, if words, that have fo intimate a connexion, as not to admit even a momentary feparation, be divided from each other by this central parks; we then perceive a conflict between the fense and found, which renders it difficult to read fuch lines gracefully. In fuch cales it is belt to factifice found to fense. For inflance, in the following line of Milton;

The fank clearly dictates the paure after "illumine," which ought to be obferved, though, if melody only were to be regarded, "illumine" fhould be connected with what follows, and no paufe made before the 4th or 6th ijllable. So hife in the following line of Pope's Epilla to Arbuthaot ;

I fit ; with fad civility I read.

The ear points out the paule, as falling after "fad," the fourth fyllable. But to feparate "fad" and "civility" would be very bad reading. The fenfe allows no

other pause, than after the second fyllable, "fit;" which therefore is the only one to be observed.

We proceed to treat of kones in pronunciation, which are different both from emphales and paufes ; confifting - in the modulation of the voice, the notes or variations of found, which are employed in public fpeaking. ) The most material instruction, which can be given on this fubiect, is to form the tones of public fpeaking upon the tones of animated conversation. Every one, who is engaged in fpeaking on a fubject, which interests him nearly, has an eloquent or perfuafive tone and manner. But, (when a speaker departs from his natural tone of expression, he becomes frigid and unperfuasive. | Nothing is more abfurd, that to suppose that as foon, as a fpeaker afcends a pulpit, or rifes in a public affembly, he is inftantly to lay afide the voice, with which he expreffes himfelf in private, and to affume a new, fludied tone, and a cadence altogether different from his natural manner. This has vitiated all delivery, and has given rife to cant and tedious monotony. Let every public fpeaker guard against this error. Whether he fpeak in private, or in a great affembly; let him remember that he fill fpeaks. / Let him take nature for his guide, and the will teach him to express his fentiments and feelings in fuch manner, as to make the most forcible and pleafing imprefiion upon the minds of his

" It now remains to meat of geflure, or what is called

action, in public difcourfe. The best rule is, attend to the looks and gefture, in which earneftnefs, indignation, compafiion, or any other emotion, difcovers itfelf to most advantage in the common intercourse of men : and let thefe be your model. ) A public fpeaker must however adopt that manner, which is most natural to himfelf. His motions and gestures ought all to exhibit that kind of expression, which nature has dictated to him ; and, unlefs this be the cafe, no ftudy can prevent their appearing fliff and forced. But, though nature is the bafis, on which every grace of gesture must be founded; yet there is room for fome improvements of art. The fludy of action confifts chiefly in guarding against awkward and difagreeable motions, and in learning to perform fuch, as are natural to the fpeaker, in the most graceful manner.) Numerous are the rules, which writers have laid down for the attainment of a proper gesticulation. But written instructions on this fabject can be of little fervice. To become ufeful, they must be exemplified. A few of the fimplest precepts however may be observed with advantage. Every fpeaker should study to preferve as much dignity, as poffible, in the attitude of his body. He should generally prefer an erect posture ; his position should be firm, that he may have the fulleft and freeft command of all his motions. If any inclination be used, it fhould be toward the hearers, which is a natural expreffion of earneftnefs. The countenance fhould corrsfpond with the nature of the difcourfe; and, when no

particular emotion is expressed, a ferious and manly look is always to be preferred. The eyes fhould never be fixed entirely on any one object, but move eafily round the audience. In motion, made with the hands, confilts the principal part of gefture in fpeaking. It is natural for the right hand to be employed more frequently, than the left. Warm emotions require the exercife of them both together. But, whether a fpeaker gefticulate with one, or with both his hands, it is important, that all his motions be eafy and unreftrained. Narrow and confined movements are usually ungraccful; and confequently motions, made with the hands, fhould proceed from the fhoulder rather, than from the elbow. Perpendicular movements are to be avoided. Oblique motions are most pleasing and graceful. Sudden and rapid motions are feldom good, Earnestness can be fully expressed without their affistance.

We cannot conclude this fulfield without earneffly admonifhing every speaker to guard against affectation, which is the defluction of good delivery. Just his manner, whatever it be, be his own; neither imitated from another, nor taken from some imaginary model, which is unnatural to him. Whatever is native, though attended by foreral defects, is likely to please; because it shows us the man; and because it has the appearance of proceeding from the heart. To attain a delivery extremely correct and graceful is, what few can expect; fince for many natural talents mult concert in

its formation. But to acquire a forcible and perfundive manner is within the power of moft perfons. They need only to/difmifs bad habits; follow nature; and fpeak in public, as they-do in private, when they fpeak in served and, from the heart.

# MEANS OF IMPROVING IN ELOQUENCE.

TO thofe, who are anxious to excel in any of the higher kinds of oratory, nothing is more neceffary, than to cultivate habits of the feveral virtues, and to refine and improve their moral feelings. A true orator mult poffs generous fentiments, warm feelings, and a mind turned toward admiration of thole great and high objects, which men are by nature formed to venerate. Connected with the manly virtues, he fhould poffs flrong and tender fenfibility to all the injuries, diffreffes, and forrows of his fellow creatures.

Next to moral qualifications, what is most requifite for an orator, is a fund of knowledge. There is no art, by which eloquence can be taught in any fphere, without a fufficient acquaintance with what belongs to that fphere. (Attention to the ornaments of flyle can only afil: an orator in fetting of to advantage the flock of materials, which he pofieffes; but the materials themfelves mult be derived from other fources, than from ribetric.) A pleader mult make himfelf completely ac-

#### )8 MEANS OF IMPROVING

quainted with the law ; he muft poffels all that learning and experience, which can be ufeful for furporting a caule, or convincing a judge. A preacher muft apply himfeli clofaly to the fludy of divinity, of pradical religion, of morals, and of human nature ; that he may be rich in all topics of infruction and perfuadion. He, who withes to excel in the fupreme council of the nation, or in any public affembly, should be thoroughly acquainted with the bufinefs, that belongs to fuch affembly ; and fhould attend with accuracy to all the facts, which may be the fubject of queftion or deliberation.

Befide the knowledge, peculiar to his profeffion, a public fpeaker fhould be acquainted with the general circle of polite literature. Poetry he will find uteful for embellihing his ftyle, for fuggeffing lively images, or pleating illulions. Hitlory may be fill more advantageous ; as the knowledge of facts, of eminent characters, and of the courfe of human affairs, finds place on many occafions. Deficiency of knowledge even in fubjects, not immediately connected with his profefion, will expole a public fpeaker to many difadvantages, and give his rivals, who are better qualified, a decided fuperiority.

To every one, who wifkes to excel in eloquence, application and indultry cannot be too much recommended. Without this it is imposfible to excel in any thing.) No one ever became a diffinguished pleader, or preach-

#### IN ELOQUENCE.

er, or fpeaker in any affembly, without previous labor and application. Industry indeed is not only necessary to every valuable acquifition; but it is defigned by Providence, as the feafoning of every pleafure, without which life is doomed to languish. No enemy is for destructive both to honorable attainments, and to the real and fpirited enjoyment of life, as that relaxed state of mind, which proceeds from indolence and diffipation ... He, who is defined to excel in any art, will be diffinguifhed by enthufiafm for that art ; which, firing his mind with the object in view, will dispose him to relifh every neceffary labor. This was the characteristic of the great men of antiquity ; and this must distinguish moderns, who wifh to imitate them. This honorable enthufiaim fhould be cultivated by fludents in oratory. If it be wanting to youth, manhood will flag exceedingly.

Attention to the beft models contributes greatly to improvement in the arts of fpeaking and writing. Every one indeed fhould endeavor to have fomething, that is his own, that is peculiar to himfelf, and will diftinguith his ftyle. Genius is certainly deprefied, or want of it betrayed, by flavilfi imitation. Yet no genius is fo original, as not to receive improvement from proper examples in ftyle, composition, and delivery. They always afford forme new ideas, and furve to enlarge and correct our own.) They quicken the current of thought, and excite emulation.

#### MEANS OF IMPROVING

In imitating the ftyle of a favorite author a material diffinction should be observed between written and spoken language. Thefe are in reality two different modes of communicating ideas. In books we expect correctnefs, precifion, all redundancies pruned, all repetitions avoided, language completely polifhed. Speaking allows a more eafy, copious ftyle, and lefs confined by rule; repetitions may often be requifite; parenthefes may fometimes be ornamental ; the fame thought muft often be placed in different points of view; fince the hearers can eatch it only from the mouth of the fpeaker, and have not the opportunity, as in reading, of turning back again, and of contemplating, what they do not entirely comprehend. Hence the ftyle of many good authors would appear fliff, affected, and even obfoure, if transferred into a popular oration. How unnatural, for inftance, would Lord Shaftfbury's fentences found in the mouth of a public fpeaker ? Some kinds of public difcourfe indeed ; fuch, as that of the pulpit, where more accurate preparation and more fludied flyle are allowable ; would admit fuch a manner better, than others, which are expected to approach nearer to extemporaneous fpeaking. But still there is generally fuch a difference between a composition, intended only to be read, and one proper to be fpoken, as fhould caution us against a close and improper imitation.

The composition of fome authors approaches nearer to the ftyle of fpeaking, than that of others; and they

#### IN ELOQUENCE. 201

may therefore be imitated with more fafety. In our own language Swift and Bolingbroke are of this defeription. The former, though corred, preferves the eafy and natural manner of an unaffected fpeaker. The flyle of the latter is more fplendid; but fill it is the flyle of fpeaking, or rather of declamation.

Frequent exercise both in composing and speaking is a neceffary mean of improvement. That kind of composition is most useful, which is connected with the profession, or fort of public speaking, to which perfons devote themfelves. This they fhould ever keep in view, and gradually inure themfelves to it. At the fame time they fhould be cautious not to allow themfelves to compose negligently on any occasion. He, who wifhes to write or fpeak correctly, fhould in the most trivial kind of composition, in writing a letter, or even in common conversation, fludy to express himfelf with propriety. By this we do not mean that he is never to write or fpeak, but in elaborate and artificial language. This would introduce ftiffnels and affectation, infinitely worfe, than the greatest negligence. But we must observe, that there is in every thing a proper and becoming manner; and on the contrary there is also an awkward performance of the fame thing. The becoming manner is often the most light, and feemingly most careles; but taste and attention are requisite to feize the just idea of it. That idea, when acquired, fhould be kept in view, and upon it fhould. be formed, whatever we write or fpeak.

Exercifes in fpeaking have always been recommended to fludents ; and, when under proper regulation, muft be of great ufe. | Thofe public and promifcuous focieties, in which numbers are brought together, who are frequently of low ftations and occupations; who are connected by no common bond of union, except a ridiculous rage for public fpeaking, and have no other object in view, than to exhibit their fuppofed talents; are inflitutions not only ufclefs, but injurious. They are calculated to become feminaries of licentioufnefs, petu-Iance, and faction. Even the allowable meetings, into which fludents of oratory may form themfelves, need direction, in order to render them ufeful. ) If their fubjects of difcourfe be improperly chofen ; if they fupport extravagant or indecent topics; if they indulge themfelves in loofe and flimfy declamation ; or accuftom themfelves without preparation to fpeak pertly on all fubjects ; they will unavoidably acquire a very faulty and vicious tafte in fpeaking. It fhould therefore be recommended to all those, who are members of fuch focieties, to attend to the choice of their fubiects : to take care, that they be useful and manly, either connected with the course of their fludies, or related to morals and tafte, to action and life. They fliould alfobe temperate in the practice of fpeaking ; not fpeak too often, nor on fubjects, of which they are ignorant ; but only when they have proper materials for a difeourfe, and have previoufly confidered and digefted the fubject. In fpeaking they fhould be cautious always to

keep good fenfe and perfuation in view rather, than a flow of eloquence. By thefe means they will gradually form themfelves to a manly, correct, and perfuative manner of fpeaking.

It may now be afked, of what use will the fludy of critical and rhetorical writers be to those, who with to excel in eloquence? They certainly ought not to be neglected; and yet perhaps very much cannot be expected from them. It is however from the original antient writers, that the greatest advantage may be derived ; and it is a difgrace to any one, whole profession calls him to fpeak in public, to be unacquainted with them. In all the antient rhetorical writers there is indeed one defect ; they are too fystematical. They aim at doing too much; at reducing rhetoric to a perfect art, which may even fupply invention with materials on every fubject; fo that one would suppose they expeded to form an orator by rule, as they would form a carpenter. But (in reality all, that can be done, is to affift and enlighten tafte, and to point out to genius the courfe, it ought to hold, )

Arithoule was the first, who took shetoric out of the hands of the fophilts, and founded it on reafon and folid fearls. Some of the profounded observations, which have been made on the pathons and manners of men, are to be found in his "Treadie on Rhetoric ; though in this, as in all his writings, his great concidency often roulars him observe. The Greak rhetoricians, who

## 204 MEANS OF IMPROVING

fucceeded him, molt of whom are now loft, improved on his foundation. Two of them full remain, Demetrius Phalereus, and Dionyfus of Halicaranflas. Both wrote on the contruction of fenences, and deferve to be confulted; particularly Dionyfus, who is a very accurate and judicious critic.

To recommend the rhetorical writings of Cicero is fuperfluous. Whatever on the fulject of eloquence is fuggefled by fo great an orator, mult be worthy of attention. His molt extensive work on this fulject is that *De Oratore*. None of his writings are more highly finished, than this treatife. The dialogue is police, the characters are well fupported, and the management of the whole is bequiful and pleating. The *Orator ed M. Brutum* is also a valuable treatife; and indeed through all Cicero's rhetorical works are diplayed hole fublime ideas of eloquence, which are calculated to form a juft taile, and to infpire that enthuliafin for the art, which is highly conducive to excellence.

But of all antient writers on the fubject of oratory the moli inftructive and moft useful is Quintilian. His inflitutions abound with good fenfe, and dicover a taffe in the higheft degree just and accurate. Almoit all the principles of good criticism are found in them. He has well digneted the antient ideas concerning rhetoric, and has delivered his infunctions in clegant and polified language.

# COMPARATIVE MERIT OF THE ANTIENTS AND MODERNS.

A VERY curious quefiion has been agitated with regard to the comparative merit of the antients and moderns. In France this difpute was carried on with great heat between Boileau and Madame Dacier for the antients, and Perrault and La Motte for the moderns. Even at this day men of letters are divided on the fubjed. A few reflections upon it may be ulfell).

/ To decry the antient claffies is a vain attempt. Their reputation is effablished upon too folid a foundation to be finaten. Imperfections may be traced in their writings, but to diferedit their works in general can belong only to peevilness or prejudice. The approbation of the public through fo many centuries eftablishes a verdict in their favor, from which there is no appeal.

In matters of mert reafoning the world may be long in error; and fyftems of philolophy often have a currency for a times, and then die. But in objects of tatle there is no fuch fallibility; as they depend not on knowledge and fcience, but upon fentiment and feeling. Now the univerfal feeling of mankind mut be right; Homer and Virgil therefore muft continue to fland upon the fame ground, which they have fo long occupied.

## COMPARISON OF THE

206

Let us guard however againft blind veneration for the antients; and inflitute a fair comparifon between them and the moderns. If the antients had the preeminence in genius; yet the moderns mult have fome advantage in all arts, which are improved by the natural progress of knowledge.

Hence in natural philosophy, aftronomy, chemistry, and other fciences, which reft upon observation of facts, the moderns have a decided fuperiority over the antients. Perhaps too in precife reafoning philosophers of modern ages are fuperior to those of antient times ; as a more extensive literary intercourse has contributed to fharpen the faculties of men. The moderns have alfo the fuperiority in hiftory and in political knowledge; owing to the extension of commerce, the difcovery of different countries, the fuperior facility of intercourfe, and the multiplicity of events and revolutions, which have taken place in the world. In poetry likewife fome advantages have been gained in point of regularity and accuracy. In dramatic performances improvements have certainly been made upon the antient models. The variety of characters is greater ; greater fkill has been difplayed in the conduct of the plot ; and a happier attention to probability and decorum. Among the antients we find higher conceptions, greater fimplicity, and more original fancy. Among the moderns there is more of art and correctnels, but lefs genius. But, though this remark may in general be juft, there:

## ANTIENTS AND MODERNS. 207

are fome exceptions from it ; Milton and Shakefpeare are inferior to no poets in any age.

Among the antients were many circumflances, favorable to the exertions of genius. They travelled much in fearch of learning, and converfed with priefles, poets, and philofophers They returned home, full of difcoveries, and fired by uncommon objects. Their enthufaifm was greater ; and, fev being finimilated to excel, as authors, their fame was more intenfe and flattering. In modern times good writing is lefs prized. We write with lefs effort. Printing has for multiplied books, that affifance is eafily procured. Hence medicority of genius prevails. To rife beyond this, and to foar above the crowd, is given to few.

In epic poetry Homer and Virgil are fill unrivalled ; and orators, equal to Demofilmes and Cicero, we have none. In hilfory we have no modern narration, fo elegant, fo picfurefque, fo animated, and interefiling, as thole of Herodotus, Thucydides, Xenophon, Livy, Tacitus, and Salluft. Our dramas with all their improvements are inferior in poetry and fentiment to thofe of Sophocles and Euripides. We have no comic dialogue, that equals the correct grateful, and delgant fimplicity of Terence. The elegies of Tibullus, the pathorals of Theoretius, and the lyric poetry of Horace, are fill unrivalled. By thofe therefore, who will to form their tafle, and marifu their genius, the utmost attention mult be paid to the antient claffice, both Greek and Roman.

After these reflections on the antients and moderns we proceed to a critical examination of the most diftinguilhed kinds of composition, and of the characters of those writers, whether antient or modern, who have excelled in them. Of orations and public difcourfes much has already been faid. The remaining proje compositions may be divided into hiltorical writing, philofophical writing, epitlolary writing, and fiditious hiltory.

# HISTORICAL WRITING.

HISTORY is a record of truth for the inftruction of mankind. Hence the great requifites in a hiftorian are impartiality, fidelity, and accuracy.

In the conduct of hiftorical detail the first object of a hiftorian thould be, to give his work all possible unity. Hiftory should not confiss of unconnected parts. Its portions should be united by fome connecting principle, which will produce in the mind an imprefion of fomething, that is one, whole, and entire. Polybius, though not an elegant writer, is remarkable for this quality.

A hiftorian flould trace actions and events to their fources. He flould therefore be well acquainted with human nature and politics. His fkill in the former

200

will enable him to defcribe the characters of individuals; and his knowledge of the latter to account for the revolutions of government, and the operation of politcal caufes on public affairs. With regard to political knowledge the antients wanted fome advantages, which are enjoyed by the moderns. In antient times there was lefs communication among neighboring fluxes; no intercourfe by eftablifhed polts, nor by ambaffadors at diflant courts. Larger experience too of the different modes of government has improved the modern hiltorian beyond the hiftorian of antiquity.

It is however in the form of narrative, and not by differtation, that the hiftorian is to impart his political knowledge. Formal difcufions expose him to furpicion of being willing to accommodate his facts to his theory. They have also an air of pedantry, and evidently refult from want of art. For reflections, whether moral, political, or philosophical, may be infinuated in the body of a narrative.

Clearners, order, and connexion are primary virtues in hiltorical narration. These are attained, when the biltorian is complete maller of his fubject; can fee the whole at one view; and comprehend the dependence of all its parts./ Hiltory being a dignified fpecies of compolition, it flouid alfo be confpicatous for gravity. There thould be nothing mean, nor vulgar in the ftyle; ne quainteris, no finartnets, no affectation, no wit.

hiftory fhould likewife be interefting, and this is the quality, which chiefly diftinguifhes a writer of genius and eloquence.

To be interefing, a hiftorian mult preferve a medium between rapid recital and prolix detail. He fhould know, when to be concife, and when to enlarge. He fhould make a proper felection of circumfrances. These give life, body, and coloring to his narration. They conflutte, what is termed hisforical painting.

In all thefe virtues of narration, particularly in picturefque defeription, the antients eminently excel. Hence the pleafure of reading Thurydides, Livy, Salluft, and Tacitus. In hiltorical painting there are great varieties. Livy and Tacitus paint in very different ways. The deferiptions of Livy are full, plain, and natural; thole of Tacitus are fhort and bold.

One embelliftment, which the moderns have laid afide, was employed by the antients. They put orations into the mouths of celebrated perfonages. By thefe they diverfifted their hildory, and conveyed both moral and political infrarditon. Thucydides was the firft, who adopted this method; and the orations, with which his hilfory abounds, are valuable remains of antiquity. It it doubful however, whether this embelliftsment fhould be allowed to the hilforian; for they form a mixture, unnatural to hilfory, of truth and fidien. The moderns are more chafte, when on great occuffons

the hiftorian delivers in his own perfon the fentiments and reafonings of oppofite parties.

/ Another fplendid embellifinment of hiftory is the delineation of charafters. Thefe are confidered, as exhibitions of fine writing ; and hence the difficulty of excelling in this province. For charafters may be too hining and labored. The accomplished hiftorian avoids here to dazke too much. He is folicitous to give the refemblance in a ftyle equally removed from meannefs and affectation. He itudies the grandeur of fimplicity.

/ Sound morality fhould always reign in hiftory. / A. hiftorian thould ever thow himfelf on the fide of virtue. It is not however his province, to deliver moral influctions in a formal manner. He thould excite indignation againft the defigning and the vicious; and by appeals to the patients he will not only improve his reader, but take away from the natural coolnefs of hiftorical narration.

In modern times hiltorical genus has finone moft in Italy. Acutene's, political fagacity, and wildom are all confpicuous in Machinevel, Guicciardin, Davila, Bentivoglio, and Father Paul. In Great Britain hiltory has been fathionable only a few years. For, though Clarendon and Burnet are confiderable hiltorians, they are inferior to Hume, Robertfon, and Gibbon.

The inferior kinds of historical composition are an-

nals, memoirs, and lives. Annals are a collection of facts in Chronological order ; and the properties of an annalist are fidelity and distinctness. Memoirs are a fpecies of composition, in which an author pretends not to give a complete detail of facts, but only to record, what he himfelf knew, or was concerned in, or what illustrates the conduct of fome perfon, or fome tranfaction, which he choofes for his fubject. It is not therefore expected of fuch a writer, that he poffers the fame profound refearch, and those fuperior talents, which are requifite in a historian. It is chiefly required of him. that he be fprightly and interefting. The French during two centuries have poured forth a flood of memoirs : the most of which are little more, than agreeable triffes. We must however except from this cenfure the memoirs of the Cardinal de Retz, and those of the Duke of Sully. The former join to a lively narrative great knowledge of human nature. The latter deferve very particular praife. They approach to the ufefulnefs and dignity of legitimate history. They are full of virtue and good ienfe ; and are well calculated to form both the heads and hearts of those, who are defigned for public bufinefs and high ftations in the

Biography is a very ufeful kind of composition; lefs fately, than hiftory; but perhaps not lefs inftructive. It affords full opportunity of difplaying the characters of coninent men, and of entering into a thorough acquaint-

ance with them. In this kind of writing Plutarch cacels; but his matter is better, than his manner; he has no peculiar beauty, nor elegance. His judgment and accuracy alfo are fometimes taxed. But he is a very humane writer, and fond of difplaying great men in the gentle lights of retirement.

Before we conclude this fubject, it is proper to obferve, that of late years a great improvement has been introduced into hidorical composition. More particular attention, than formerly, has been given to laws, cuftoms, commerce, religion, literature, and to every thing, that thows the fpirit and genius of nations. It is now conceived, that a hidorian ought to illusfrate mamers as well, as facts and events. Whatever difplays the flate of mankind in different periods ; whatever illusfrates the progrefs of the human mind; is more uffull, than details of faces and battles.

# PHILOSOPHICAL WRITING AND DIA-LOGUE.

OF Philofophy the profeffed defign is inftrustion. With the philofopher therefore flyle, form, and drefs are inferior objects. But they must not be wholly neglected. The fame truths and reafonings, delivered with elegance, will firike more, than in a dull and dry manner.

#### 214 PHILOSOPHICAL WRITING

Beyond mere perfjecuity the firideft precifion and aceuracy are required in a philosophical writer ; and thefe qualities may be polified without drynck. / Philofophical writing admits a polifhed, neat, and elegant flyle. It admits the calm figures of fpecelt, but rejects, whatever is florid and tumid. / Plato and Cicero have left philosophical treatifes, compoled with much elegance and beauty. Sence is too fond of an affected, brilliant, fparkling manner. Locke's Treatife on Human Underflanding is a model of a clear and diting philofophical flyle. In the writings of Shaftbury on the other hand philosophy is dreffed up with teo much ortrament and herey.

Among the antients philofophical writing often affuned the form of dialogue. Thato is emiment for the beauty of his dialogues. In richmets of imagination nophilofophic writer, antient or modern, is equal to him. His only fault is the excefilve fertility of his imagination, which fometimes obfeures his judgment, and frequently carries him into allegory, fistion, enthufhafm, and the airy regions of myltical theology. Cicero's dialogues are not fo fpirited and charafteritical, as thofe of Plato. They are however agreeable, and well fupported; and fhow us converfation, carried on among fome principal perfons of antient Rome with freedom, good breeding, and dignity. Of the light and humorous dialogue Lucian is a model 1 and he has been imitated by foread moden writers. Fortencelle has writted by foread moden writers. Fortencelle has written dialogues, which are fprightly and agreeable ; but his characters, whoever his perfonages be, all become Frenchmen. The divine dialogues of Dr. Henry More amid the academic fliffnels of the age are often remarkable for character and vivacity. Bithop Berkley's dialogues are abftract, yet perfpicuous.

# EPISTOLARY WRITING.

N epiftolary writing we expect eafe and familiarity ; and much of its charm depends on its introducing us into fome acquaintance with the writer. Its fundamental requifites are nature and fimplicity, fprightlinefs and wit. The ftyle of letters, like that of converfation, fhould flow eafily. It ought to be neat and correct, but no more. , Cicero's epifiles are the most valuable collection of letters, extant in any language. They are composed with purity and elegance, but without the leaft affectation. Several letters of Lord Bolingbroke and of Bifhop Atterbury are mafterly. In those of Pope there is generally too much fludy ; and his letters to ladies in particular are full of affectation. Those of Swift and Arbuthnot are written with eafe and fimplicity. Of a familiar correspondence the most accomplished model are the letters of Madame de Sevignè. They are eafy, varied, lively, and beautiful. The letters of Lady Mary Wortley Montague are perhaps more agreeable to the epiftolary flyle, than any in the English language.

# FICTITIOUS HISTORY.

HIS fpecies of composition includes a very numerous, and in general a very infignificant clafs of writings, called romances and novels. Of these however the influence is known to be great both on the morals and tafte of a nation. Notwithstanding the bad ends, to which this mode of writing is applied, it might be employed for very uleful purpofes. Romances and novels deferibe human life and manners, and difcover the errors, into which we are betrayed by the paffions. Wife men in all ages have ufed fables and fictions, as vehicles of knowledge ; and it is an obfervation of Lord Bacon, that the common affairs of the world are infufficient to fill the mind of man. He must create worlds of his own, and wander in the regions of imagination.

All nations whatfoever have difcovered a love of fiction, and talents for invention. The Indians, Perfians, and Arabians abounded in fables and parables. A. mong the Greeks we hear of the Ionian and Milefian tales. During the dark ages fiction alfumed an unufual form from the prevalence of chivalry. Romances arole. and carried the marvellous to its fummit. Their knights were patterns not only of the most heroic courage, but of religion, generofity, courtefy, and fidelity; and the heroines were no lefs diffinguifhed for modelty, delicaev, and dignity of manners. Of these romances the

#### FICTITIOUS HISTORY.

217

moft perfect model is the Orlando Fariofo. But, as magic and enchantment came to be dibelieved and ridiculed, the chivalerian romances were difcontinued, and were fucceeded by a new (pecies of facilitious writing.

Of the fecond flage of romance writing the Cleopatra of Madame Scuderi and the Arcadia of Sir Philip Sydney are good examples. In their however there was fiill too large a proportion of the marvellous; and the books were too voluminous and tedious. Romance writing appeared therefore in a new form; and dwindled down to the familiar novel./ Interefing fituations in real life are the groundwork of novel writing. Upon this plan the French have produced forme works of confiderable merit. Such are the Gil Blas of Le Sage and the Marianne of Marivaux.

In this mode of writing the English are inferior to the French; yet in this kind there are fome performances, which difcover the frength of the Drithly genius. No fiction was ever better fupported, than the Adventures of Robinfon Crufoe. Fielding's novels are highly diftinguished for humor and boldnefs of character. Richardfon, the author of Clarifia, is the moft moral of all our novel writers; but he poffeffes the unfortunate talent of fpinning our pieces of anufement into an immeafurable length. / The trivial performances, which daily appear under the title of lives, adventures, and hittories, by anonymous authors, are moft infpid; and, it mut be confeffed, often tend to deprave the morals, and to encourage diffipation and idlenefs.

U

## NATURE OF POETRY.

Its ORIGIN and PROGRESS. VERSIFICATION.

W HAT, it may be alked, is poetry; and how does it differ from profe? Many diffutes have been maintained among critics upon thefe quefitions. The effence of poetry is furprofed by Ariflotle, Plato, and others, to confil in fiftion. But this is too limited a defeription. Many think the characterikic of poetry lies in imitation. But initiation of manners and characters may be carried on in profe as well, as in poetry.

Perhaps the beft definition is this, " poetry is the "language of paffion, or of enlivened imagination, " formed most commonly into regular numbers." As the primary object of a poet is to pleafe and to move; it is to the imagination and the paffions, that he addreffes himfelf. It is by pleafing and moving, that he aims to indruct and reform.

Poetry is older, than profe. In the beginning of fociety there were occalions, upon which men met togeher for feals and facrifices, when mufte, dancing, and longs-were the chief entertainment. The meetings of American tribes are dilinguified by mufte and fongs.] In fongs they celebrate their religious rites and martial achievements; and in fuch fongs we trace the beginning of poetic composition. /

## NATURE OF POETRY. 219

Man is by nature both a poet and muficitin.) The fame impute, which produced a poetic flyle, prompted a certain melody, or modulation of found, fuited to the emotions of joy or grief, love or anger. Mufic and poetry are united in fong, and mutually affift and exalt each other. / The first poets fung their own veries. Hence the origin of verification, or the arrangement of words to tune or melody.

Poets and fongs are the firt objects, that make their appearance in all nations. Apollo, Orpheus, and Amphion were the first tamers of markind among the Greeks. The Gothic nations had their fealders, or poets. The Celtic tribes had their bards. Poems and fongs are among the antiquities of all countries; and, as the occadions of their being composide are nearby the fame; fo they remarkably refemble each other in flyle. They comprife the celebration of gods, and heroets, and victories. They abound in fire and entufiain; they are wild, irregular, and glowing.

During the infance of poetry all its different kinds were mingled in the fame composition ; but in the progrefs of fociety poems affuned their different regular forms. Time feparated into classes the feveral kinds of poetic composition. The ode and the elegy, the epic poem and the drama, are all reduced to rule, and exercise the acuteness of critician.

## ENGLISH VERSIFICATION.

N ATIONS, whofe language and pronunciation were mulical, refled their verification chiefly on the quantities of their fyllables; but mere quantity has very little effect in Englifh verfe. For the difference, made between long and thort fyllables in our manner of pronouncing them, is very inconfiderable. The only perceptible difference among our fyllables arifes from that firong percuffion of voice, which is termed accent., This accent however does not always make the fyllable longer; but only gives it more force of found; and it is rather upon a certain order and fuecefflon of accented and unaccented fyllables, than upon their quantity, that the melody of our verfe depends.

In the confinution of our verfe there is another effortial circumftance. This is the caefural paule, which falls near the middle of each line. This paule may fall after the fourth, fitth, fixth, or feventh fyllable; and by this mean uncommon variety and richnefs are added to Englith verification.

Our English verfe is of Iambic ftructure, composed of a nearly alternate fuccefilion of unaccented and accented fyllables. / When the paufe falls earlieft, that is, after the fourth fyllable, the brickeft melody is thereby ENGLISH VERSIFICATION. 221

formed. Of this the following lines from Pope are a happy illustration ;

On her white bread | a fparkling croßs fhe wore, Which Jews might kifs, | and Infidels adore ; Her ivery books ] a forighty mind difclofe, Quick, as her eyes, | and as unfix'd, as thofe. Favors to none, | to all the fmiles extends, Of the rejech, ] but never once offends.

When the paufe falls after the fifth fyllable, dividing the line into two equal portions, the melody is fentibly altered. / The verie, loling the brilk air of the former paule, becomes more fmooth and flowing. /

Eternal funfhine | of the fpotlefs mind, Each prayer accepted, | and each wifh refign'd.

When the paufe follows the fixth fyllable, the melody becomes grave. / The movement of the verfe is more folemn and meafured.

The wrath of Peleus' fon, | the direful fpring Of all the Grecian wors, | O Goddefs, fing !

The grave cadence becomes fill more fenfible, when the paule follows the feventh fyllable. / This kind of verfe however fieldom occurs; and its effect is to diverfify the melody.

> And in the fmooth, defcriptive | murmur ftill. Long loved, adored ideas, | all adieu.

#### PASTORAL POETRY.

Our blank verfe is a noble, bold, and diffneumbered mode of verification. Jt is free from the full clofe, which rhyme forces upon the ear at the end of every couplet. Hence it is peculiarly fuited to fubjects of dignity and force. It is more favorable, than rhyme, to the fublime and the highly pathetic. It is the molt proper for an epic poem and for tragedy. /Rhyme finds its proper place in the middle regions of poetry ; and blank verif in the higheft.

The prefent form of our Englifh heroic thyme in couplets is modern. The measure, used in the days of Elizabeth, James, and Charles I. was the fanza of eight lines. Waller was the firft, who introduced couplets ; and Dryden eftablifhed the ufage. Waller fmoothed our verfe, and Dryden perfected it. The verification of Pope is peculiar. It is flowing, fmooth, and correct in the higheft degree. He has totally thrown afide the triplets, fo common in Dryden. / In eafe and variety Dryden excels Pope. He frequently makes his couplets run into one another with fomewhat of the freedom of blank verfe. /

# PASTORAL POETRY.

T was not, before men had begun to affemble in great cities, and the buftle of courts and large focieties was known, that paftoral poetry affumed its pref-

## PASTORAL POETRY.

ent form. From the turnult of a city life men looked back with complacency to the innocence of rural retirement. In the court of Ptolemy Theocritus wrote the first pathorals, with which we are acquainted; andin the court of Augustus Virgil imitated him.

The paftoral is a very agreeable fpecies of poetry. It lays before us the gay and pleafing feenes of nature. It recalls objects, which are commonly the delight of our childhood and youth. It exhibits a life, with which we affociate ideas of innocence, peace, and leifure. It transforms us into Elyfan regions. It prefeats many objects favorable to poetry; rivers and mountains, meadows and hills, rocks and trees, flocks and flepherds void of care.

A palloral poet is careful to exhibit, whatever is moft pleafing in the paltoral flate. , He paints its fimplicity, tranquility, innocence, and happinefs; but conceals its rundenefs and mifery. If his pictures be not thole of real life; they muft refemble it. . This is a general idea of paltoral poetry. But, to underfland it more perfectly, let us confider, 1. The fenery. 2. The charafters **;** and lafty the fubjeds, it flouid exhibit.

The fcene muft always be in the country 1 and the poet muft have a talent for defcription. In this refpect Virgil is excelled by Theocritus, whole defcriptions are richer and more picturefque. In every pattoral a rural profeet fhould be drawn with didinfinefs. It is not

enough to have unmeaning groups of rofes and violets, of birds, breezes, and brooks thrown together. /Agood poet gives fuch a landfcape, as a painter might copy. His objects are particularifed. (The flream, the rock, or the tree, fo flands forth, as to make a figure in the imagination, and give a pleafing conception of the place, where we are.

In his allufions to natural objects as well, as in profeffed defriptions of the fcenery, the poet mult fludy variety. He mult diverfify his face of nature by prefeating us new images. He mult alfo fait the fcenery to the fubject of his paftoral; and exhibit nature under fuch forms, as may correspond with the emotions and fentiments, he defories. Thus Virgil, when he gives the lamentation of a defpairing lover, communicates a gloom to the fcene.

Tantum inter denfas, umbrofa cacumina, fagos, Affiduè veniebat ; ibi b.ac incondita folus Montibus et fylvis fludio jaëtabat inani.

With regard to the charafters in paflorals it is not folficient, that they be perfors refuding in the country. Courtiers and citizens, who refort thither occafionally, are not the charafters, expected in pafterals/ We expect to be entertained by fhepherds, or perfors wholly engaged in rural occupations. / The fhepherd mult be plain and unaffected in his manner of thinking. An amiable fimplicity mult be the groundwork of his

#### PASTORAL POETRY.

character ;/though there is no necessity for his being dull and infipid. He may have good fenfe, and even vivacity; tender and delicate feelings. But he muft never deal in general reflections, or abstract reafonings; nor in conceits of gallantry ; for thefe are confequences of refinement. When Aminta in Taffo is difentangling his miftrefs's hair from the tree, to which a favage had bound it : he is made to fay, "Cruel tree, how " couldft thou injure that lovely hair, which did thee " fo much honor ? Thy rugged trunk was not wor-" thy of fo lovely knots. What advantage have the " fervants of love, if those precious chains are common " to them and to trees ?" Strained fentiments, like thefe, fuit not the woods. The language of rural perfonages is that of plain fenfe and natural feeling; as in the following beautiful lines of Virgil ;-

Sepibus in nofiris parvam te roficida mala (Dux ego vofter eram) vidi cum matre legentem ; Alter ab undecimo tum mo jam ceperat annus, Jam fragiles poteram a terra contingere ramos. U! vidi , ut perii, ut me malus abfulit error !

The next inquiry is, what are the proper fubjed's of paîtorals? For it is not enough, that the poet give us fincpherds dictourfing together. Every good poem has a fubjed; that in forme way intereft us. In this lies the difficulty of paftoral writing. The adive feenes of country life are too barren of incidents. The condition of a flepherd has few things in it; that excite cariofity or furprife. Hence of all poems the pafloral is molt meagre in fubjed, and leaft divertified in ftrain. Yet this defect is not to be afcribed foldy to barrennefs of fubjeds. It is in a great meafure the fault of the poet. For human nature and human paflonss are much the fame in every fituation and rank of life. What a variety of objeds within the rural fphere do the paflons prefent! /The fituggles and ambition of fhepherds; their adventures; their difquite and felicity; the rivallhip of lovers ; unexpected fuceefies and difafters; are all proper fubjeds for the pafloral mufe. ,

Theocritus and Virgil are the two great fathers of paftoral writing. For fimplicity of fentiment, harmony of numbers, and richnefs of feenery, the former is highly diffinguifhed. But he formetimes defeends to ideas, that are grois and mean, and makes his fhepherds abufive and immodefl. Virgil on the contrary preferves the paftoral fimplicity without any offenfive rufficity.

Modern writers of pathorals have in general imitated the antient poets. Sannazarius however, a Latin poet, in the age of Leo X. attempted a bold innovation by composing pifcatory celegues, and changing the fcene from the woods to the feas, and the charafter from fhepherds to fifthermen. But the attempt was fo unhappy, that he has no followers. The toilforme life of fifthermen has nothing agreeable, to prefent to the imagination. Fifthes and marine productions have nothing poetic-

#### PASTORAL POETRY.

al in them. Of all the moderns Gefner, a poet of Switzerland, has been the moft happy in pattoral compofition. Many new ideas are introduced in his Idyls, His fcenery is firking, and his deferiptions lively. He is pathetic, and writes to the heart. Neither the paftorals of Pope, nor of Philips, do much honor to Englifh poetry. The paftorals of Pope are barren; their chief merit is the fmoothness of the numbers. Philips attempted to be more fimple and natural, than Pope ; but wanted genius to fupport the attempt. His topics, like those of Pope, are beaten ; and inflead of being natural or fimple he is flat and infpid. Shenftone's pathoral ballad is one of the most elegant poems of the kind in the Englifh language.

In latter times pathoral writing has been extended into regular drama; and this is the chief improvement, the moderns have made in it. Two pieces of this kind are highly celebrated, Guarini's Pathor Fido, and Taffo's Aminta. Both poffes great beauties; but the latter is the preferable poem, because lefts intricates, and lefs affseftd; though not wholly free from Italian reforment. As a poem however, it has great merit. The poetry is pleafing and gentle, and the Italian language confers on it much of that fuffnefs, which is fuited to the paforal.

The Gentle Shepherd of Allan Ramfay is a paftosul drama, which will bear compariton with any compolition of the kind in any language. To this admirable poem it is a difadvantage, that it is written in the old ruitic dialect of Scotland, which muft foon be obfolete; and it is a farther difadvantage, that it is formed fo entirely on the rural manners of Scotland, that more, but a native of that country, can thoroughly underfland and relikh it. It is full of natural defoription, and excels in tendernefs of fentiment. The characters are well drawn, the incidents affecting, the fectory and manners lively and juft.

# LYRIC POETRY.

A HE Ode is a fpecies of poetry, which has much dignity, and in which many writers in every age have diffinguinhed themfelves. / Ode in Greek is the fame with long or hymn; and lyric poetry implies that the verks are accompanied with a lyre, or mufcal inftrument. In the ode poetry retains its first form, and its original union with mulic. /Sentiments commonly confitute its fubjed. It recites not adions. //its first in adthe manner of its execution mark its charafer. It admits a bolder and more padionate firstin, than is allowed in fimple recital. / Hence the enduninfm, that belongs to it. Hence that negled of regularity, thofe digrefilons, and that dijorder, it is fuppofed to admit-

All odes may be claffed under four denominations. 1. Hymns addreffed to God, or composed on religious

### LYRIC POETRY.

fubjects. a. Heroic odes, which concern the celebration of herces, and great actions. 3. Moral and philofophical odes, which refer chieffy to virtue, friendfrip, and humanity. 4. Feftive and amorous odes, which are calculated merely for amufement and pleafure.

Enthuliatin being confidered, as the characterific of the ode, it has often degenerated into licentionfinefs. This fpecies of writing has above all others been infedded by want of order, method, and connexion.) The poet is out of fight in a moment. He is fo abrupt and eccentric, fo irregular and obfure, that we cannot follow him. ( It is not indeed neceffary, that the flru@ure of the ode be fo perfectly regular, as an epic poem.) But in every composition there ought to be a whole; and this whole fhould confit of connected parts. ( The transition from thought to thought may be light and delicate, but the connexion of ideas floud be perferved; the author thould think, and not rave. (

Pindar, the father of lyric poetry, has led his indiators into enthufialiti wildnefs. They indiate his diorder without eatching his dipirit. In Horac's odes every thing is correct, harmonious, and happy. His elevation is moderate, not rapurous. Grace and elegance are his characterilics. He fupports a moral fentiment with dignity, touches a gay one with felicity, and has the art of trilling moft agreently. His laaguage too is moft fortunate. Many Latin poets of later ages have instated him, Calimir, a Polifh poet of the laft century, is of this number; and difcovers a confiderable degree of original genius and poetic fire. He is however far inferior to the Roman in graceful expredion. Buchanan in fome of his lyric compositions is very elegant and claffical.

In our own language Dryden's ode on St. Cecilia is well known. Mr. Gray in fome of his odes is celebrated for tendernefs and fublimity ; and in Dodfley's Micellanies are feveral very beautiful lyric poems. Profeffedly Pindaric odes are feldom intelligible. Cowley is doubly harth in his Pindaric compositions. His Anacreontic odes are happier ; and perhaps the molt agreeable and perfed in their kind of all his poems.

# DIDACTIC POETRY.

OF didaftic poetry it is the express intention to convey infru dion and knowledge. Jit may be executed in different ways. The poet may treat fome influidive indject in a regular form; or without intending a great or regular work he may inveigh again particular vices, or make fome moral observations on human life and characters.

The highest species of didactic poetry is a regular treatife on some philosophical, grave, or useful subject,

#### DIDACTIC POETRY.

Such are the books of Lucretius de Rerum Natura, the Georgies of Virgil, Pope's Effay on Criticifm, Akenfide's Pleafures of the Imagination, Armflrong on Health, and the Art of Poetry by Horace, Vida, and Boileau.

( In all fuch works, as infruction is the profeted object, the chief merit confifts in found thought, juft principles, and apt illuftrations. It is neceffary however that the poet enliven his leftons by figures, incidents, and poetical painting. /Virgil in his Georgics embellifhes the most trivial circumflances in rural life. When he teaches that the labor of the farmer muß begin in fpring, he exprefies himfelf thus;

Vere novo gelidus canis cum montibus humor Liquitur, et Zephyro putris fe gleba refolvit ; Depreffo incipiot jam tum mihi Taurus aratro Ingemere, et fulco attritus fplendefoere vomer.

( In all didatic works fuch method is requirite, as will clearly exhibit a connected train of infruction. With regard to epifodes and embellifikments writers of didatic poetry are iadulged great liberties. For in a poetical performance a continued fories of infruction without embellithment foon fatigues. The digrefilions in the Georgies of Virgil are his principal beauties. The happinets of a country life, the fable of Arifleus, and the tale of Orpheus and Eurydice, cannot be praied too much.

A diffactic poet ought allo to connech his epifodes with his fubject. I in this Virgil is eminent. Among modern didactic poets Akenfide and Armftrong are diffinguified. The former is rich and poetical; but the latter maintains greater equality, and more chafte and correct degance.

Of didadic poetry fatires and epiffles run into the moft familiar flyle. / Satire feems to have been at firlt a relic of antient comedy, the grofinefs of which was corrected by Ennius and Lucilius. At length Horace brought it into its prefent form. / Reformation of manners is its profelfed end ; and vice and vicious characters are the objects of its cenfure. / There are three different modes, in which it has been conducted by the three great antient fatirifts, Horace, Juvenal, and Perfus.

The fatires of Horace have not much elevation. They exhibit a measured profe. Eafe and grace characterize his manner; and he glances rather at the follies and weaknefies of mankind, than at their vices. He finiles, while he reproves. He moralizes, like a found philofopher, but with the politenefs of a courtier. Juvenal is more declamatory and ferious; and has greater firength and fire. Perflus has diftinguished himfelf by a noble and fublime morality.

Poetical epifiles, when employed on moral or critical fubjects, feldom rife into a higher firain of poetry, than

### DESCRIPTIVE POETRY.

fatires. But in the epitholary form many other inbjects may be treated; a slove, poetry, or elegiste. The ethieal epithes of Pope are a model; and in them he flows the frength of his genius. Here he had a full opportunity for difplaying his judgment and wit, his concile and happe seprefilon, together with the harmony of his numbers. His imitations of Horace are to happy, that it is difficult to fay, whether the original or the copy ought to be mofit admired.

Among moral and didadic writers Dr. Young ought not to be paffed over in filence. Genius appears in all his works ; but his Univerial Paffion may be confideed, as poffelling the full merit of that animated concilenels, particularly requilite in fatirical and didadic compolitions. At the fame time it is to be obferved, that his wit is often too fparkling, and his fentences too pointed. In his Night Thoughts there is great energy of exprefion, feveral pathetic paffages, many happy images, and many pious reflections. But the fentiments are frequently overfitained and turgid, and the Ajel harth and obfeure-

# DESCRIPTIVE POETRY.

N deferiptive poetry the higheft exertions of geniumay be difplayed. / In general indeed/defeription is introduced, as an embellithment, not as the fubjeft of a

W 2

regular work. It is the teft of a poet's imagination, and always diffinguifhes an original from a fecond rate genius. / A writer of an inferior clafs fees nothing new or peculiar in the object, he would paint; his conceptions are loofe and vague; and his expreffions feeble and general. / A true poet places an object before our eyes. He gives it the coloring of life; a painter might copy from him. /

<sup>1</sup> The great art of picture/que defcription lies in the felection of circum/lances. Thele ought never to be vulgar or common. They flould mark florogly the object. No general defcription is good; all diffinct ideas are formed upon particulars. / There flould alfo be uniformity in the circum/lances felected. JIn defcribing a great object every circum/lance brought forward hoold tend to aggrandize; and in defcribing a gay object all the circum/lances flould tend to beautify it. Lafly, the circum/lances in defcription flould be expended with concilences and fimplicity. 1

The largeft and fulleft defcriptive performance in perhaps any language is Thomfon's Scafons ; a work, which poffelfes very uncommon merit. The ftyle is fplendid and frong, but formetimes harth and indifilinte He is an animated and beautiful defcriber ; for he had a feeling heart and a warm imagination. He fludied nature with care ; was enamoured of her beauties; and had the happy talent of painting them, like a mafter. To flow the power of a fingle well chofen circumftance in heightening a defeription, the following paffage may be produced from his Summer, where, relating the effects of heat in the torrid zone, he is led to take notice of the pelilience, that deflroyed the Englithfleet at Carthagena under Admiral Vernon.

All the circumflances, here felected, tend to heighten the difmal fcene; but the last image is the most striking in the picture.

Of defcriptive narration there are beautiful examples in Parnell's Tale of the Hermit. The fetting forth of the hermit to vifit the world, his meeting a companion, and the houfes, in which they are entertained, of the vain man, the coverous man, and the good man, are pieces of highly finished painting. But the richedand the most remarkable of all the defcriptive poems in the English language are the Allegro and the Penferofo of Mitton. They are the flowford, wherea many fucceeding poets have enriched their defcriptions, and are inimitably fine poems. Take, for inflance, the following lines from the Penferofo ;

#### DESCRIPTIVE POETRY.

2:36

-I walk unfeen On the dry, fmoothfhaven green. To behold the wandering moon Riding near her higheft noon ; And oft, as if her head fhe bow'd, Stooping through a fleecy cloud, Oft on a plat of rifing ground I hear the far off curfew found. Over fome wide watered fhore Swinging flow with folemn roar ; Or, if the air will not permit, Some full removed place will fit, Where glowing embers through the room Teach light to counterfeit a gloom ; Far from all refort of mirth. Save the cricket on the hearth; Or the bellman's drowfy charm; To blefs the doors from nightly harm : Or let my lamp at midnight hour Be feen in fome high lonely tower, Exploring Plato, to unfold What worlds, or what vaft regions hold The immortal mind, that hath forfook Her manfion in this flefly nook : And of these demons, that are found Ih fire, in air, flood, or under ground.

Here are no general expressions; all is picture/que, expressive, and concile. One strong point of view is exbibited to the reader; and the impression made is lively and interesting.

Both Homer and Virgil excel in poetical defeription.

#### DESCRIPTIVE POETRY.

In the fecond Æneid the facking of Troy is fo particularly defcribed, that the reader finds himfelf in the midft of the fcene. The death of Priam is a mafterpiece of defcription. Homer's battles are all wonderful. Offian too paints in ftrong colors, and is remarkable for touching the heart. He thus pourtrays the ruins of Balclutha ; " I have feen the walls of Balclu-" tha : but they were defolate. The fire had refound-" ed within the halls; and the voice of the people is " now heard no more. The ftream of Clutha was re-" moved from its place by the fall of the walls; the " thiftle flook there its lonely head ; the moss whiftled " to the wind. The fox looked out of the window ; " the rank grafs waved round his head. Defolate is " the dwelling of Moina ; filence is in the houfe of her " fathers."

Much of the beauty of deforiptive poetry depends upon a proper choice of epithets. Many poets are often carlefs in this particular; hence the multitude of unmeaning and redundant epithets. Hence the " Liqui-" di Fontes" of Virgil, and the " Prata Canis Albi-" cant Pruinis" of Horace. To obferve that water is liquid, and that finow is white, is little better, than mere tautology. Every epithet thould add a new idea to the word, which it qualifies. So in Milton;

Who fhall tempt with wandering feet The dark, unbottomed, infinite abyls; And through the palpable obscure find out

His uncouth way ? Or fpread his airy flight, Upborn with indefatigable wings, Over the vaft abrupt ?

The defeription here is ftrengthened by the epithets. The wandering feet, the unbottomed abyfs, the palpable obfcure, the uncouth way, the indefatigable wing, are all happy exprefilons.

THE POETRY OF THE HEBREWS.

I N treating of the various kinds of poetry that of the Scriptures julity deferves a place. The facred books prefent us the most antient monuments of poetry now extant, and furnish a curious fubject of criticifim. They difplay the table of a remote age and country. They exhibit a fingular, but beautiful fpecies of composition; and it mult give great pleafure, if we find the beauty and dignity of the ftyle adequate to the weight and importance of the matter. Dr. Lowth's learned treatife on the poetry of the Hebrews ought to be perufied by all. It is an exceedingly valuable work both for elegance of flye and juftnefs of criticifim. We cannot do better than to follow the track of this ingenious author.

Among the Hebrews poetry was cultivated from the earlieft times. Its general confutution is fingular and peculiar. It confuts in dividing every period into correforment, for the most part into equal members,

#### THE HEBREWS.

which anfwer to each other both in fenfe and found. In the first member of a period a fentiment is expreffed 4 and in the fecond the fame fentiment is amplified, or repeated in different terms, or fometimes contrafted with its opposite. Thus, "Sing unto the Lord a new "fong i fing unto the Lord all the earth. Sing unto "the Lord, and blefs his name; fhew forth his falvation " from day to day. Declare his glory among the "heathen; his worders among all pecple."

This form of poetical composition is deduced from the manner, in which the Hebrews fung their facred kyrms. Thefe were accompanied with mufic, and performed by bands of fingers and muficians, who alternately anforced each other. One band began the kyrm thus : "The Lord reigneth, let the earth rejoice;" and the chorus, or femi-chorus, took up the corresponding verifielt : "Let the multitudes of the illes be glad "thereof."

But, independent of its peculiar mode of confruction, the facred poerry is diffinguilhed by the higheff beauties of ftrong, concile, bold, and figurative expredition. Concifenels and fitength are two of its most remarkable characters. The fantences are always fhort. The fame thought is never dwelt upon long. Hence the fabilimity of the Hebrew poetry ; and all writers, who attempt the fublime, might profit much by imitating in this respect the flyle of the old tethament. No writings abound io much in bold and animated figures, as the facred books. Metaphors, comparisons, allegories, and perfonifications are particularly frequent. But, to relifh these figures justly, we must transport ourselves into Judea, and attend to particular circumstances in it. Through all that region little or no rain falls in the fummer months. Hence, to reprefent diffrefs, frequent allufions are made to a dry and thirfty land, where no water is ; and hence, to defcribe a change from diffrefs to prosperity, their metaphors are founded on the falling of fhowers, and the burfting out of fprings in a defert. Thus in Ifaiah, " The wildernefs and the foli-" tary place fhall be glad, and the defert fhall rejoice " and bloffom, as the role. For in the wilderness shall " waters break out, and ftreams in the defert ; and " the parched ground shall become a pool; and the " thirfty land iprings of water ; in the habitation of " dragons there shall be grafs with rushes and reeds."

Comparifons, employed by the facred poets, are generally fhort, touching only one point of refemblance. Such is the following ; "He, that ruleth over men, " mult be juft, raling in the fear of God ; and he fhall " be, as the light of the morning, when the fun rifeth ; " even a morning without clouds ; as the tender grafs, " fpringing out of the earth by clear fhining after " rain."

Allegory is likewife frequently employed in the facred books ; and a fine initance of this occurs in the lxxxth Pfalm, wherein the people of lirael are compar-

#### THE HEBREWS.

ed to a vine. Of parables the prophetical writings are full; and, if to us they fometimes appear obfcure, we should remember that in early times it was univerfally the cuftom among all eaftern nations, to convey facred truths under myflerious figures.

The figure however, which elevates beyond all others the poetical fiyle of the Scriptures, is perforification. The perforifications of the infipired writers exceed in force and magnificence thofe of all other poets. This is more particularly true, when any appearance or operation of the Almighty is concerned. " Before him " went the peffilence. The waters faw thee, O God, " and were afraid. The mountains faw thee, and they " trembled. The overflowings of the waters paffed " by ; the deep uttered his voice, and lifted up his " very different from modern poetry. It is the burft of infpiration. Bold fublimity, not correct elegance, is is chräcker.

The feveral kinds of poetry, found in Scripture, are chiefly the didačtic, elegiac, pattoral, and lyric. The book of Proverbs is the principal inflance of the didactic fpecies of poetry. Of elegiac poetry the lamentation of David over Jonathan is a very beautiful inflance. Of pattoral poetry the Song of Solomon is a high exemplification; and of lyric poetry the Old Teflament is full. The whole book of Pialms is a collection of facred odes.

# 242 THE POETRY OF THE HEBREWS.

Among the compofers of the facered books there is an evident diverity of ftyle. Of the facered poets the moft eminent are the author of the book of Job, David, and Ifaiah. In the compositions of David there is a great variety of manner. In the foft and tender he excels; and in his Pfalms are many lofty paffages. But in firength of defeription he yields to Job; in fublimity to Ifaiah. Without exception Ifaiah is the moft fublime of all poets. Dr. Lowth compares Ifaiah to Homer, Jercmiah to Simonides, and Ezciel Joel, Micah, Habakkuk, and effecially Nahum, are diffinguifhed for poetical fpirit. In the prophecies of Daniel and Jonah there is no poetty.

The book of Job is extremely antient; the author uncertain; and it is remarkable, that it has no connexion with the affairs or manners of the Hebrews. It is the most deferiptive of all the facred poems. A peculiar glow of fancy and firength of defeription characterife the author; and no writer abounds fo much in metaphors. He renders vibile, whatever he treats. The feene is laid in the land of Ux, or Idumaza, which is a part of Arabia; and the imagery employed differs from that, which is peculiar to the Hebrews.

OF all poetical works the cpic poem is the moth dignified. To contrive a flory, which is entertaining, important, and inftrudive; to enrich it with happy incidents; to enliven it by a variety of charafters and deferiptions; and to maintain a uniform propriety of fentiment, and a due elevation of flyle, are the highest efforts of poetical genius.

An epic poem is the recital of fome illuftrious enterprife in a poetical form. Epic poetry is of a moral nature ; and tends to the promotion of virtue. With dis view it a8ts by extending our ideas of perfection, and exciting admiration. / Now this is accomplifhed only by proper repreferations of hereic decids and virtuous characters. Valor, truth, juftice, fidelity, friendflip, piety, and magnanimity are objects, which the epic mule prefents to our minds in the moft fplendid and honorable colors.

Epic composition is diffinguilhed from hildory by its poetical form, and its liberty of fiction. / It is a more calm composition, than tragody. It requires a grave, equal, and fupported dignity. On fome occasions it demands the pathetic and the violent ; and it embraces a greater compass of time and adion, than dramatic writing admits.

The action or fubject of an epic poem mult have three properties. It mult be one; it mult be great; it mult be interefing. / One action or enterprife mult confitute its fubject. Aviltotle infilts on unity, as effential to epic poetry; becaufe independent facts never aff.ed to deeply, as a tale, that is one and connected. Virgil has choien for his fubject the eftablifhment of "Eneas in Italy; and the anger of Achiles with its confequences is the fubject of the Iliad.

It is not however to be underflood, that epic unity excludes all epifodes. On the contrary critics confider them, as great ornaments of epic poetry. /They diverfify the fuliped; and relieve the reader by fhifting the fcene. Thus Heftor's vifit to Andromache in the Iliad and Erminia's adventure with the fleepherd in the feventh book of the Jerufalem afford us a well judged and pleafing retreat from camps and battles.

Secondly, the fubject of an epic poem muft be for great and fplendid, as to fix attention, and to juffify the magnificent apparatus, the poet beflows on it. /The fubject fhould alfo be of antient date. /Both Lucan and Voltaire have transgreated this rule. By confining himfelf too firidly to hittorical truth the former does not pleafe; and the latter has improperly mingled well known events with faithous. Hence they exhibit not that greatnefs, which the epic requires.

The third requisite in an epic fubject is, that it be in-

terefling. This depends in a great meafure upon the choice of it. But it depends much more upon the fkildl management of the poet. He mult fo frame his plan, as to comprehend many affecting incidents, He mult fometimes dazzle with valiant achievements ; fometimes he muft be awful and augult ; often tender and pathetic ; and he muft fometimes give us gentle and pleating feenes of love, friendflip, and affection.

To render the fubjeft interefling, much also depends upon the dangers and obflacles, which muft be encountered. / It is by the management of these, that the poet muft rouse attention, and hold his reader in fufpenfe and agitation.

It is generally fuppofed by critics, that an epic poem fhould conclude fuccefsfully; as an unhappy conclution deprefies the mind. Andeed it is on the proferous fide, that epic pots generally conclude. But two authors of great name, Milton and Lucan, hold the contrary courfe. The one concludes with the fubverfion of Roman liberty; and the other with the expulsion of man from Paradifs.

No precife boundaries can be fixed for the duration of the opic aftion. / The aftion of the Illiad lafts, according to Boffu, only forty feven days. The aftion of the Odyffoy extends to eight years and a half; and that of the Æneid includes about fix years.

The perfonages in an epic poem flould be proper and well fupported. They flouid difflay the features of human nature; and may admit different degrees of virtue, and even vice; though the principal characters fhould be fuch, as will raife adminution and love? Poetic characters are of two forts, general and particular. General characters are fuch, as are wife, brave, and virtuous, without any farther diffinction. Particular characters express the fpecies of bravery, of wildom, and of virtue, for which any one is remarkable. I no this diferimination of characters Homer excels. Taffo approaches the neareft to him in this refpect ; and Virgil & the mold deficient.

Among epic poets it is the practice to felect fome perfondage, as the hero of the tale. This renders the unity of the fubject more perfect, and contributes highly to the interest and perfection of this fpecies of writing. It has been afked, Who then is the hero of Paradife Loft ? The devil, fay fome critics, who affect to be pleafant againf. Milton. But they miltake his intention by fuppoling that, whoever is triumphant in the clofe, mult be the hero of the poem. For Adam is Milton's hero ; that is, the capital and moft interefling figure in his poem.

In cpie poetry there are befide human characters gods and fupernatural beings. This forms, what is called the machinery of cpic poetry s/and the French fuppofe this effontial to the nature of an epic poem.

They hold that in every epic composition the main action is neceffarily carried on by the intervention of gods. But there feems to be no folid reason for their opinion. Lucan has no gods, nor fupernatural agents. The author of Leonidas allo has no machinery.

But, though machinery is not abfolutely neceffary, to the epic plan, it ought net to be totally excluded from it. The marvelous has a great charm for mole readers. It leads to fublime defoription, and fills the imagination. At the fame time it becomes a poet to be temperate in the ufe of fupernatural machinery; and fo to employ the religious faith or fuperfittion of his country, as to give an air of probability to events, mol country to the common courfe of nature.

With regard to the allegorical perfonages, Fame, Diford, Love, and the like, they form the work kind of machinery. In defoription they may fometimes be allowed; but they fhould never bear any part in the action of the poem. As they are only mere names of general ideas, they ought not to be confidered, as perfons; and cannot mingle with human afters without an intolerable confusion of fhadows with realities.

In the narration of the poet it is of little confequence, whether he relate the whole flory in his own character, or introduce one of his perfonages, to relate a part of the adion, that paffed before the poem opens. / Homer follows one method in his Iliad, and the other in his Odyffey. It is to be obferved however that, if the marrative be given by any of the actors, it gives the poet greater liberty of fpreading out fuch parts of the fubjedt, as he inclines to dwell upon in perfon, and of comprising the reft within a flort recital. When the fubjedt is of great extent, and comprehends the tranfactions of feveral years, as in the Odyfley and Zheid; this method ferms preferable. But, when the fubjedt is of fmaller compafs and thorter duration, as in the Hiad and Jerufalem; the poet may without difadvantage relate the whole in his own perfon.

What is of moft importance in the narration is, that it be perforcious, animated, and enriched with every poetic beauty. J No fort of composition requires more frength, dignity, and five, than an epic poem. It is the region, in which we look for every thing fublime in defeription, tender in fentiment, and bold or lively in expression. The ornaments of epic poetry are grave and chafte. Nothing loofe, ludicrous, or affected, finds place there. All the objects, it prefents, ought to be great, tender, or pleafing. Deferiptions of difguiling or fhocking objects are to be avoided. Hence the fable of the Harpies in the Zheid, and the allegory of Sin and Death in Paradife Lofe, fhould have been omitted.

# HOMER'S ILIAD AND ODYSSEY.

A H E father of epic poetry is Homer ; and, in order to relift him, we mult dived outfelves of modem ideas of dignity and refinement, and transport our imagination almost three thousand years back in the biftory of mankind. The reader is to expect a picture of the antient world. The two great characters of Homer's poetry are fire and fimplicity. But, to have a clear idea of his merit, let us confider the Iliad under the three heads of the fubject or action, the characters, and the narration.

The fubject of the Hind is happily chofen. For no fubject could be more fplendid, than the Trojan war. A great confederacy of the Grecinn flates and ten years fiege of Troy mult have fpread far abroad the renown of many military exploits, and given an extenfive intercli to the keroes, who were concerned in them. Upon thefe traditions Homer grounded his poem y and, as he lived two or three centuries after the Trojan war, he had full liberty to intermingle failed with hidory. He chofe not however the whole Trojan war for his fubject ; but with great judgment fielded the quarrel between Achilles and Agamennon, which includes the moft intercling period of the war. He has thus given greater unity to his poem. He has edialed one hero, or principal character, that is, Achilles 4 and

# HOMER'S ILIAD

fhown the pernicious effects of difcord among confederated princes.

The praife of high invention has in every age been juftly given to Homer. His incidents, speeches, characters, divine and human ; his battles, his little hiftory pieces of the perfors flain, difcover a boundlefs invention. Nor is his judgment lefs worthy of praife. His flory is conducted with great art. He rifes upon us gradually. His heroes are introduced with exquifite fkill to our acquaintance. The diffrefs thickens, as the poem advances; every thing ferves to aggrandize Achilles, and to make him the capital figure.

In charafters Homer is without a rival. He abounds in dialogue and convertation, and this produces a fpirited exhibition of his perionages. This dramatic method however, though more natural, especifics, and animated, is lefs grave and majefic, than narrative. Some of Homer's fpeeches are unfeationable, and others trifling. With the Greek vivacity he has also fome of the Greek loquacity.

In no charader perhaps does he diplay greater art, than in that of Heles. Notwithflanding her frailty and erimes, he contrives to make her an interefing objeft. The admiration, with which the old generals behold her, when fhe is coming toward then 5 her veiling herfelf and fhedding tears in the presence of Priam, her grief at the fight of Menelaus, her upbridling of

Paris for his cowardice, and her returning fondness for him, are exquifite ftrokes, and worthy of a great macter.

Homer has been accufed of making Achilles too brutal a character; and critics feem to have adopted this cenfure from two lines of Horace;

Impiger, iracundus, inexorabilis, acer, Jura negat fibi nata ; nibil non arrogat armis.

It appears that Horace went beyond the truth. Achilles is pationate; but he is not a conternner of law. He has reafon on his fide; for, though he difcovers too much heat, it muft be allowed, that he had been notorioufly wronged. Befide bravery and contempt of death he has the qualities of opennefs and fincerity. He loves his fubjects, and refpects the gods. He is warm in his friend/hips; and throughout he is highfprited, gallant, and honorable.

Homer's gods make a great figure ; but his machinery was not his own invention. He followed the traditions of his country. But, though his machinery is often lofty and magnificent ; yet his gods are often deficient in dignity. They have all the human pations ; they drink, and feaft, and are vulnerable, like men. While, however, he at times degrades his divinities, he knows how to make them appear with moft awful majefly. Jupiter for the moft part is introduced with great dignity ; and feveral of the moft fabline concep-

# HOMER'S ILIAD

tions in the Iliad are founded on the appearances of Neptune, Minerva, and Apollo.

The flyle of Homer is eafy, natural, and highly animated. Of all the great poets he is the molt fimple in his flyle, and refembles molt the flyle of the poetical parts of the Old TeRament. Pope's translation of him affords no idea of his manner. His verification however is allowed to be uncommonly melodious; and to carry beyond that of any poet refemblance of found to femfe.

In narration Homer is always concile and deferiptive. He paints his objects in a manner to our fight. His battles are fingularly admirable. We fee them in all their hurry, terror, and confution. In fimilies no poet abounds for much. His comparifons however, taken in general, are not his greatch beauties; they come upon us in too quick fuccefion; and often diffurhis narration or defeription. His lions, bulk, engles, and herds of fheep, neur too frequently.

The criticiim of Longinus upon the Odyfley is not without foundation; that in this poera Homer may be likened to the fitting fun, whole grandeur remains without the heat of his meridian beams. It wants the vigor and fublimity of the Iliad; yet poffeffes for many beauties, as to be juildy entitled to high praile. It is a very anufing poem, and has much greater variety, than the Iliad. It contains many interefling flories,

253

and pleafing pidures of antient manners. Inflead of the ferocity, which pervades the Iliad, it prefents us most anniable images of humanity and hofpitality. It entertains us with many a wonderful adventure, and many a landfcape of nature; and influeds us by a rich vein of morality and virtue, running through every part of the poem.

There are fome defects however in the Odyfley. Many of its fcenes fall below the majefty of an epic poem. The laft twelve books are in many places languid and tedious; and perhaps the poet is not happy in the difcovery of Ulyffes to Penelope. She is too cautions and diffruftfull; and we meet not that joyous forprific, expected on fich an occation.

# THE ÆNEID OF VIRGIL.

HE diffinguifhing excellencies of the Abneid are elegance and tendernefs. Virgil is lefs animated and lefs fublime, than Homer; but he has fewer negligencies, greater variety, and more dignity. The Zheid has all the corrednefs and improvements of the Avg iftain age. We meet no contention of herose about a female flave; no violent feolding, nor abufive language; but the poem opens with the utmoft magnificence.

# 254 THE ÆNEID OF VIRGIL.

The fubject of the Æneid, which is the eftablifhment of Æneas in Italy, is extremely happy. Nothing could be more intereding to the Romans, than Virgil's deriving their origin from fo famous a hero, as Æneas. The object was fplendid itfelf; it gave the poet a theme, taken from the traditionary hiftory of his country; it allowed him to adopt Homer's mythology; and afforded him frequent opportunities of glancing at all the-future great exploits of the Romans, and of deferibing Italy in its antient and fabulous fate.

Unity of action is perfectly preferved in the Æneid. The ferthement of Æneas in Italy by order of the gods is conflantly kept in view. The epifodes are properly linked to the main fubjed; and the nodus or intrigue of the poem is happily formed. The wrath of Juno, who oppofes Æneas, gives rife to all his difficulties, and connects the human with the celeficial operations through the vehole poem.

Great art and judgment are difplayed in the Æneid; hut even Virgil is not without his faults. One is, that he has so few marked characters. A chates, Cloanthes, Gyas, and other Trojan heroes, who accompanied Æneas into Italy, are undiffinguifhed figures. Even Æneas himfelf is not a very interefting hero. He is deferibed indeed, as pious and brave; but his character is not marked by those firokes, that touch the heart. The character of Dido, is the best fupported in the whole Æneid. Her warmth of patilon, keenneft of r

#### THE ÆNEID OF VIRGIL. 255

fentment, and violence of character exhibit a more animated figure, than any other, Virgil has drawn.

The management of the fuljeft alfo is in fome refpets exceptionable. The fix laft books received not the finithing hand of the author; and for this reafon he ordered his poem to be committed to the finances. The wars with the Latins are in dignity inferior to the more interefing objects, previoully prefented to us; and the reader is tempted to take part with Turnus againt *Eness*.

The principal excellency of Virgil, and what he poffeffes beyond all poets, is tendernefs. His foul was full of fenfibility. He felt himfelf all the affecting circumftances in the fcenes, he defcribes ; and knew how by a fingle ftroke to reach the heart. In an epic poem this merit is next to fublimity. The fecond book of the Æneid is one of the greatest masterpieces, ever executed. The death of old Priam, and the family pieces of Æneas, Anchifes, and Creufa, are as tender, as can be conceived. In the fourth book the unhappy paffion and death of Dido are admirable. The interview of Æneas with Andromache and Helenus in the third book ; the epifodes of Pallas and Evander, of Nifus and Euryalus, of Laufus and Mezentius, are all striking instances of the power of raising the tender emotions. The best and most finished books are the first, fecond, fourth. fixth, feventh, eighth, and twelfih.

# LUCAN'S PHARSALIA.

Virgil's battles are in fire and fublimity far inferior to Homer's. But in one important epifode, the deferm into hell, he has outdone Homer in the Odyffey by many degrees. There is nothing in all antiquity, equal in its kind to the fath book of the Æneid. The feenery, the objects, and the defeription are great, folemn, and fublime.

With regard to the comparative merit of thefe two great princes of cpic poetry, it mult be allowed, that Homer was the greater genius, and Virgil the more correct writer. Homer is more original, more bold, more fublime, and more forcible. In judgment they are both eminent. Homer has all the Greek viracity; Virgil all the Roman flatelinefs. The imagination of Homer is the molt copious; that of Virgil the molt correct. The flrength of the former lies in warming the fancy; that of the latter in touching the heart. Homer's flyle is more fimple and animated; Virgil's more elegant and uniform.

# LUCAN'S PHARSALIA.

LUCAN is inferior to Homer and Virgil; yet he deferves attention. There is little invention in his Pharfalia; and it is conducted in too hiltorical a manner to be firitily epic. It may be arranged however in the epic clafs, as it treats of great and heroic advers-

# LUCAN'S PHARSALIA. 357

tures. The fubject of the Pharfalia has all the epic dignity and grandeur; and it posseffes unity of object, viz. the triumph of Cæsar over Roman liberty.

But, though the fubject of Lucan is confelfedly heroic, it has two defects. Civil wars prefent objects too fhocking for epic poetry, and furnish odious and difgufting views of human nature. But Lucan's genius ferms to delight in favage feenes.

The other defect of Lucan's fubject is, that it was too near the time, in which he lived. This deprived bin of the additance of faiton and machinery; and thereby rendered his work lefs fplendid and amufing. The facts, on which he founds his poem, were too well known, and too recent, to admit fables and the interpolition of pods.

The charaders of Lucan are drawn with fpirit and force. But, though Pompey is his hero, he has not made him very interefiting. He marks not Pompey by any high diffindion, either for magnanimity or valor. He is always furpaffed by Cæfar. Cato is Lucan's favorite charadter ; and, whenever he introduces him, he rifes above himfelf.

In managing his flory Lucan confines himfalf too much to chronological order. This breaks the thread of his narration, and huries him from place to place. He is allo too digreffive; frequently quitting his fui-

# 258 LUCAN'S PHARSALIA.

ject, to give us fome geographical description, or philosophical disquisition.

There are feveral poetical and fpirited deforiptions in the Pharfalia; but the flrength of this poet does not lie either in narration or defoription. His narration is often dry and harih; his deforiptions are often overwrought, and employed on difagreeable objects. His chief merit confifts in his fentiments; which are noble, friking, glowing, and ardent. He is the moft philofophical, and the moft patriotic poet of antiquity. He was a floie; and the fpirit of that philofophy breathes through his poem. He is elevated and bold; and abounds in well timed exclanations and apoftrophes.

As his vivacity and fre are great, he is apt to be carried away by them. His great defect is want of moderation. He knows not, where to flop. When he would aggrandize his objects, he becomes tumid and unnatural. There is much bombaft in his poem. His tafte is marked with the corruption of his age; and inflead of poetry he often exhibits declamation.

On the whole however he is an author of lively and original genius. His high fentiments and his fire ferve to atone for many of his defects. His genius had frenggh, but no tendernefs, nor amenity. Compared widt Virgil, he has more fire and fublimer fentiments; but in every thing elfe falls infinitely below him, particularly in purity, elegance, and tendernefs.

#### TASSO'S JERUSALEM.

Statius and Silius Italicus, though poets of the epic elafs, are too inconfiderable for particular criticifm.

# T'ASSO's JERUSALEM.

JERUSALEM DELIVERED is a firitily regular epic poem, and abounds with beauties. The fubject is the recovery of Jerufalem from Infidels by the united powers of Christendom. The enterprise was fileadid, venerable, and heroic; and an interefling contrait is exhibited between the Christians and Saracens. Religion renders the fubject auguft, and opens a natural field for machinery and fublime defeription. The action too lies in a country, and in a period of time, fufficiently remote, to admit an intermixture of fable with history.

Rich invention is a capital quality in Taffo. He is fall of events, finely diverified. He never fatigues his reader by mere war and fighting. He frequendy filtion the feene; and from camps and battles transports us to more pleating objects. Sometimes the folermities of religion; fometimes the intrigues of love; at other times the adventures of a journey, or the incidents of pafforal life, relieve and entertain the reader. The work at the fame time is artfully connected; and in the midt of variety there is perfect unity of plan.

# 260 TASSO'S JERUSALEM.

Many characters enliven the poem ; and thefe diftinelly marked and well fupported. Godfrey, the leader of the enterprife, is prudent, moderate, and brave; Tanered amorous, generous, and gallant. Rinaldo, who is properly the hero of the poem, is paffionate and refemful ; but full of each, honor, and heroifm. Solyman is highminded; Erminia tender; Armida artful and violent, and Clorinda mafculine. In drawing characters Tafio is fuperior to Virgil, andyields to no poet, but Homer.

He abounds in machinery. When celeftial beings interpole, his machinery is noble. But devils, enchancers, and conjuers at too great a part throughout.his poem. In general the marvellous is carried to extravagance. The poet was too great an admirer of the romantic fight of knight errantry.

In defcribing magnificent objects his flyle is firm and majellic. In gay and pleafing defcription it is foft and infinuating. Erminia's paftoral retreat in the feventh book, and the arts and beauty of Armida in the fourth book, are exquifitely beautiful. His battles are animated, and properly varied by incidents. It is rather by actions, charafters, and defcriptions, that he intereffs vations, charafters, and defcriptions, that he intereffs far inferior to Virgil in tendernefs; and, when he aims at being fentimental and pathetic, he is apt to become artificial.

#### THE LUSIAD OF CAMOENS. 26

It has often been objected to Taffo, that he abounds in point and conceit; but this cenfure has been carried too far. For in his general character he is marfcultne and Arong. The humor of decrying him paffed from the French critics to thole of England. But their driftures are founded either in ignorance or prejudice. For the *fjeuplalm* is in my opinion the third regular epic poem in the world; and flands next to the Iliad and Æneid. In fimplicity and fire Taffo is inferior to Homer; in tendernefs to Virgil; in fublimity to Milton; but for fartility of invention, variety of incidents, exprefilion of characters, richnefs of defoription, and beauty of flyls, no poet, except the three jult named, can be compared to him.

# THE LUSIAD OF CAMOENS.

I HE Portuguefe boah of Camoens, as the Italians do of Tailo. The difcovery of the Eaft Indies by Vafeo de Gama, an enterprite alke (plendid and interefling, is the fubject of the poem of Camoens. The adventures, diffreifes, and actions of Vafeo and his countrymen, are well fancied and deferibed; and the Lufind is conducted on the epic plan. The incidents of the poem are magnificent; and, joined with forme wildnefs and irregularity, there is difplayed in it much poetic épiti, flrong fancy, and bold defeription. In

# 262 THE LUSIAD OF CAMOENS.

the poem however there is no attempt toward painting characters. Vafco is the hero, and the only perfonage, that makes any figure.

The machinery of the Lufiad is perfectly extravagant; being formed of an odd mixture of Christian ideas and Pagan mythology. Pagan divinities appear to be the deities ; and Chrift and the Holy Virgin to be inferior agents. One great object however of the Portuguese expedition is to extend the empire of Christianity, and to extirpate Mahometanism. In this religious undertaking the chief protector of the Portuguefe is Venus, and their great adverfary is Bacchus. Jupiter is introduced, as foretelling the downfal of Mahomet. Vafco during a florm implores the aid of Chrift and the Virgin; and in return to this prayer Venus appears, and, difcovering the ftorm to be the work of Bacchus, complains to Jupiter, and procures the winds to be calmed. All this is most preposterous; but toward the end of his work the poet offers an awkward apology for his mythology; making the goddefs Thetis inform Vafco that fhe and the other heathen divinities are no more, than names to defcribe the operations of Providence.

In the Lußad however there is fome fine machinery of a different kind. The appearance of the genius of the river Ganges in a dream to Emanuel, king of Portugal, inviting him to difcover his feerst farings, and acquainting him, that he was the monarch, defitin-

### THE TELEMACHUS OF FENELON. 263

ed to enjoy the treasures of the East, is a happy idea. Bat in the fifth canto the poet difplays his nobleft conception of this fort, where Vafco recounts to the king of Melinda all the wonders of his voyage. He tells him that, when the fleet arrived at the Cape of Good Hope, which never had been doubled before by any navigator, there appeared to them fuddenly a huge phantom, rifing out of the fea in the midft of tempeft and thunder, with a head, that reached the clouds, and a countenance, that filled them with terror. This was the genius of that hitherto unknown ocean ; and he menaced them in a voice of thunder for invading those unknown feas; foretelling the calamities, that were to befal them, if they fhould proceed ; and then with a mighty noife difappeared. This is a very folemn and firiking piece of machinery ; and fhows that Camoons was a poet of a bold and lofty imagination.

THE TELEMACHUS OF FENELON.

I T would be unpardonable in a review of epic poets to forget the amiable Fenclon. His work, though in profe, is a poent , and the plan in general is well contrived, having epic grandeur and unity of action. He employs the antient mythology ; and excel, in application of it. There is great richnefs as well, as baauty, in his definitions. To forf and each, feace, his genits

# 264 THE TELEMACHUS OF FENELON.

is more peculiarly fuited; fuch, as the incidents of paftoral life, the pleafures of virtue, or a country flourifhing in peace.

His first books are eminently excellent. The adventures of Calypfo are the chief beauty of his work. Vivacity and intereft join in the narration. In the books, which follow, there is lefs happinefs in the execution, and an apparent languor. The author in warlike adventures is moft unfortunate.

Some critics have refulfed to rank this work among epic poems. Their objection arises from the minute details it exhibits of virtuous policy, and from the difcouries of Mentor, which recur too frequently, and too much in the frain of commonplace morality. To thele peculiarilies however the author was led by the defign, with which he wrote, that of forming a young prince to the cares and duites of a virtuous monarch.

Several epic poets have deferibed a defeent into hell ; and in the profpeds, they have given us of the invifible world, we may obleve the gradual refinement in the opinions of men concerning a future flate of rewards and punifilments. Homer's defeent of Ulyffes into hell is indifined and dreary. The feene is in the country of the Cimmerians, which is always covered with clouds and darknefs ; and, when the fpirits of the dead appear, we hardly know whether Ulyffes is above or below ground. The ghofts too, even of the heroer, appear diffatisfied with their condition.

#### THE HENRIADE OF VOLTAIRE. 265

In Virgil the defect into hell diffeovers great refinement, correfponding to the progrefs of philotophy. The objets are more diffind, grand, and awful. There is a fine defeription of the feparate manfons of good and bad fpirits. Fencion's vifit of Telemachus to the fhades is full much more philotophical than Virgil's. He refines the antient mythology by his knowledge of the true religion, and adoms it with that beautiful enthurfafm, for which he is for remarkable. His relation of the happinefs of the juft is an excellent defeription in the myfile frain.

# THE HENRIADE OF VOLTAIRE.

T H E Henriade is without doubt a regular epic prom. In feveral places of this work Voltaire difcovers that boldnefs of conception, that vivacity and livelines of expression, by which he is so much diltinguished. Several of his comparisons are new and happy. But the Henriade is not his maßterpiece. In the tragic line he has certainly been more fuccefsful, than in the epic. French verification is illy fuired to epic poetry. It is not only fettered by rhyme, but wants devation. Hence not only feeblenefs, but fometimes profaic flatneds in the flyle. The poetre confegurately languithes and the reader is not animated by that fpirit, which is infinited by a fublime composition of the epic kind.

# 266 THE HENRIADE OF VOLTAIRE.

The triumph of Henry IV, over the arms of the League is the fubject of the Henriade. The action of the poem properly includes only the fege of Paris. It is an action perfectly epic; and conducted with due regard to unity, and to the rules of eritics. But it has great defects. It is founded on civil wars; and preferts to the mind those odious objects, mafacres and affafinations. It is allo of too recent date, and too much within the bounds of well known hittory. The author has farther erred by mixing fiction with truth. The poem, for inflance, opens with a voyage of Henry's to England, and an interview between him and Queen Elizabeth; though Henry never faw England, nor exer converfed with Elizabeth. In fubjects of fuch notoriety a fiction of this kind fhocks every intelligent reader.

A great deal of machinery is employed by Voltaire for the purpole of embellihing his poem. But it is of the worlt kind, that of allegorical beings. Difford, Cunning, and Love appear, as perfonages, and mix with human adors. This is contrary to all rational criticiin. Ghofts, angels, and devils have a popular criticiene, but every one knows that allegorical beings are no more, than reprefentations of human paffions and dispositions; and ought not to have place, as actors, in a poem, which relates to human tranfactions.

In justice however it must be observed, that the machinery of St. Louis possessed dignity. The praf-

pect of the invitible world, which St. Louis gives to Henry in a dream, is the fineft paffage in the Henriade. Death bringing the fouls of the departed in fucceflion before God, and the palace of the Definite opened to Henry, are firtking and magnificent of pets.

Though fome of Voltaire's epifodes are properly extended, his narration is too general. The events are fuperficially related, and too much crowded. The Arain of fentiment however, which pervades the Henriade, is high and noble.

# MILTON'S PARADISE LOST.

M ILTON chalked out a new and very extraordinary courfe. As foon, as we open his Paradife Loft, we are introduced into an invifible world, and furrounded by celeftial and infernal beings. Angels and devils are not his machinery, but his principal actors. What in any other work would be the marvelous, is in this the natural courfe of events 3 and doubts may arife, whether his poem be firidly an epic composition. But, whether is be foor not, it is certainly one of the higheit efforts of poetical genius 3 and in one great characterifile of epic poetry, majefty and fublimity, is equal to any, that bears this name.

The fubject of his poem led Milton upon difficult ground. If it had been more human and lefs theologi-

cal; if his occurrences had been more connected with real life ; if he had afforded a greater difplay of the characters and paffions of men; his poem would have been more pleafing to most readers. His fubject however was peruliarly fuited to the daring fublimity of his genius. As he alone was fitted for it ; fo he has shown in the conduct of it a wonderful ftretch of imagination and invention. From a few hints, given in the facred Scriptures, he has raifed a regular ftructure, and filled his poem with a variety of incidents. He is fometimes dry and harfh ; and too often the metaphyfician and divine. But the general tenor of his work is interefting, elevated, and affecting. The artful change of his objects, and the fcene, laid now in heaven, now on earth, and now in hell, afford fufficient diverfity ; while unity of plan is perfectly fupported. Calm fcenes are exhibited in the employments of Adam and Eve in Paradife ; and bufy fcenes, and great actions, in the enterprifes of Satan, and in the wars of Angels. The amiable innocence of our first parents and the proud ambition of Satan afford a happy contraft through the whole poem, which gives it an uncommon charm. But the conclusion perhaps is too tragic for epic poetry.

The fubject naturally admits no great difplay of charadiers; but fuch, as could be introduced, are properly fupported. Satan makes a flriking figure; and is the beft drawn charader in the poem. Milton has

artfully given him a mixed character, not altogether void of fome good qualities. He is brave, and faithful to his troops. Amid his impiety he is not without remorfe. He is even touched with pity for our first parents ; and from the necessity of his muation justifies his defign against them. He is actuated by ambition and refentment rather, than by pure malice. The characters of Beelzebub, Moloch, and Belial, are well painted. The good angels, though defcribed with dignity, have more uniformity of character. Among them however the mild condefcention of Raphael and the tried fidelity of Abdiel form proper characteriftic diffinctions. The attempt to deferibe God Almighty himfelf was too bold, and accordingly most unfuccefsful. The innocence of our First Parents is delicately painted. In fome fpeeches perhaps Adam appears too knowing and refined for his fituation. Eve is hit off more happily. Her gentleneis, modefly, and frailty are exprellively characteristic of the female character.

Milton's great and diffinguilhing ercellence is his fublimity. In this perhaps he excels even Homer, The first and fecond books of Paradife Loft are almodt a continued feries of the higheft fublime. But his fublimity differs from that of Homer; which is always accompanied by impetutofity and fire. The fublime of Milton is a calm and amazing grandeur. Homer warms and hurries us along; Milton fixes us in a flate of elevation and aftonilhument. Homer's fublimity ap-

pears most in his description of actions; Milton's in that of wonderful and stupendous objects.

But, while Milton excels moft in fublimity, his work abounds in the beautiful, the pleafing, and the tender. When the fcene is in Paradife, the imagery is gay and finding. His defcriptions fhow a fortile imagination ; and in his fimilies he is remarkably happy. If faulty, it is from their too frequent allufions to matters of learning, and to antient fables. It muft alfo be confeffed, that there is a falling off in the latter part of Paradife Loft.

The language and verification of Milton have high merit. His blank verife is harmonious and diverified ; and his flyle is full of majefly. There may be found indeed fome profaic lines in his poem. But in a work fo long; and fo harmonious thefe may be forgiven.

Paradife Loft amid beauties of every kind has many inequalities. No high and daring genius was ever uniformly correct. Milton is too frequently theological and metaphyfical ; his words are often technical ; and he is affectedly oftentatious of his learning. Many of his faults however are to be imputed to the pedantry of his age. He diffeovers a vigor, a grafp of genius, equal to every thing great ; fometimes he rifes above every other poet ; and fometimes he falls below himfelf.

# DRAMATIC POETRY.

# TRAGEDY.

IN all civilized nations/dramatic poetry, has been a favorite amufement. It/divides itfelf into the two forms of Tragedy and Comedy. /Of thefe tragedy is the moft dignified ; as great and ferious objects intereft us more, than little and ludicrous ones. / The former refls on the high paffions, the virtues, crimes, and fufferings of mankind ; the latter on their humors, follies, and pleafarces ; and ridicule is its fole influrment. /

( Tragedy is a direct initiation of human manners and adions. It does not, like an epic poem, exhibit churacters by defeription or narration; it fets the perfonages before us, and makes them adt and fpeak with proprity. This fpecies of writing therefore/requires deep knowledge of the human heart; and, when happily executed, it has the power of raifing the flrongeft emotions. /

In its general ftain and fpirit traggedy is favorable to virtue. Characters of honor claim our refpect and approbation; and, to raife indignation, we mult paint a perfon in the odious colors of vice and depravity. Virtuous men indeed are often reprefented by the tragic poet, as unfortunate; for this happens in real

# DRAMATIC POETRY.

272

life. But he always engages our hearts in their behalf; and never reprefents vice, as finally triumphant and happy. Upon the fame principle, if bad men fucceed in their defigns, they are yet finally conducted to punifhment. It may therefore be concluded, that tragedies are moral compositions.

It is affirmed by Arifotle, that the defign of tragedy is to purge our paffions by means of pity and terror. But perhaps it would have been more accurate, to have faid that the object of this fpecies of composition is to improve our virtuous fendibility. / If a writer excite our pity for the allicked, infpire us with proper fentiments on beholding the vicifitudes of life, and fimulate us to a void the misfortunes of others by exhibiting their errors; he has accomplished all the moral purposes of tragedy.

In a tragedy it is neceffary to have an interefling flory, and that the writer conduct it in a natural and probable manner.) For the end of tragedy is not to much to elevate the imagination, as to affed the heart. This principle, which is founded on the clearest reafon, excludes from tragedy all machinery, or fabulous intervention of gods. /Ghofts alone from their foundation in popular belief have maintained their place in tragedy.

To promote an impression of probability, the story of a tragedy according to some critics should never be

#### TRAGEDY.

a pure fidion, but ought to be built on real fids. This however is carrying the matter too far. For a fiditious tale, if properly conduced, will melt the heart as much, as real hiftory. Hence the tragic poet mixes many fidtious circumflances with well known fields. Moft readers never think of feparating the hiftorical from the fabulous. They attend only to what is probable, and are touched by events, that refemble nature. Accordingly fome of the moft affecting tragedies are entirely fictitious in their fubjects. Such are the Fair Penitent, Douglas, and the Orfphan.

In its origin tragedy was rude and imperfect. Among the Greeks it was at first nothing more, than the fong, which was fung at the feltival of Bacchus. Thefe fongs were fometimes fung by the whole company, and fometimes by feparate bands, anfwring alternately to each other, and making a chous. To give this entertainment fome variety, Thefpis, who lived about five hundred years before the Chriftian æra, introduced a perfon between the fongs, who made a recitation in verfe. Æfchylns, who lived fifty years after him, introduced a dialogue between two perfons or afors, comprehending form interfuing flory; a and placed them on a ftage, adorned with fcenery. The drama now began to alfume a regular form ; and was foon after brought to perfection by Sopholes and Euripides.

It thus appears that the chorus was the foundation of tragedy. But, what is remarkable, the dramatic di-

alogue, which was only an addition to it, at length became the principal part of the entertainment; and the chorus, lofing its dignity, canne to be accounted only an acceffory in tragedy. At laft in modern tragedy it has entirely difappeared; and its abfence from the flage forms the chief diffinition between the antient and modern drama.

The chorus, it mult be allowed, rendered tragedy more magnificent, inftrustive, and moral. But on the other hand it was unnatural, and leffined the interest of the piece. It removed the reprefentation from the refemblance of life. It has accordingly been with propriety excluded from the flage.

The three unities of adion, place, and time, have been confidered, as effential to the proper conduct of dramatic fable, JOf thee threeyonity of adion jis undoubtedly most important. This/confifts in the relation, which all the incidents introduced bear to fome defign or effecd, combining them naturally into one whole./ This unity of fubject is most effential to tragedy. For a multiplicity of plots by diftrading the attention prevents the patients from rifing to any height. Hence the abfurdity of two independent adions in the fame play. There may indeed be underplots ; but the poet fhould make thefe fubfervient to the main action. They should confpire to bring forward the cataftrophe of the play.

Of a feparate and independent action or feature there is a clear example in Additon's Caro. The fubjeft of this tragedy is the death of Cato, a noble perfonage, and fupported by the author with much eignity. But all the love feenes in the play; the paffion of Cato's two fons for Lucia, and that of Juba for Cato's daughter, are mere epifodes. They break the unity of the fubje@t; and form a very unfeatonable junction of gallantry with high fentiments of patriotifm.

Unity of adion mult not however be confounded with fimplicity of plot. / Unity and fimplicity import different things in dramatic composition./ The plot is fimple, when a finall number of incidents is introduced into it./ With refpect to plots the antients were more fimple, than the moderns. The Greek tragedise appear indeed to be too naked, and defitute of interefting events. The moderns admit a much greater variety of incidents; which is certainly an improvement, as it renders the entertainment more animated and more inftrudive. It may,however be carried too far; for an overcharge of adion and intrigue produces perplexity and embarrafiment. Of this the Mourning Bride of Congreve is an example. The incidents fueceed each other too rapidly; and the cataltrophe, which ought to be plain and fimple, is artificial and intricate

Unity of action mult be maintained not only in the general confiruction of the fable, but in all the acts and teenes of the play. ) The division of every play into five

2.7.6

acts is founded merely on common practice, and the authority of Horace ;

> Neve minor, neu sit quinto productior actu Fabula.

There is nothing in nature, which fixes this rule. On the Greek flage the division by acts was unknown. The word act never occurs once in the Poetics of Aristotle. Practice however has established this division ; and the poet must be careful, that each act terminate in a proper place. / The first act fhould contain a clear exposition of the fubicet./ It should excite curiofity. and introduce the perfonages to the acquaintance of the fpectators. | During the fecond, third, and fourth acts, the plot fhould gradually thicken. The paffions fhould be kept conftantly awake. / There fhould be no feenes of idle conversation, or mere declamation. The fufpenfe and concern of the fpectators should be excited more and more. This is the great excellency of Shakefpeare. Sentiment, paffion, pity, and terror fhould pervade every tragedy.

In the fifth #6, which is the feat of the cataffrephe, the author (hould moli fully difplay his art and genius. The first requisite is, that the unravelling of the plot be brought about by probable and natural means. Secondly, the cataftrophe (hould be fimple, depending on few events, and including but few perfors. /Paffionate femfibility languithes, when divided among many obj. (3).

# TRAGEDY.

Laftly, in the cataftrophe every thing fhould be warn, and glowing; and the poet muft be fimple, ferious, and pathetic; using no language, but that of nature.

It is not effential to the catafrophe of a tragedy, that it end happily. Sufficient diffrefs and agitation with many tender emotions may be railed in the courté of the play. But in general the fpirit of tragedy leans to the fide of leaving the imprefilon of virtuous forrow frong upon the mind.

A curious queflion here occurs; how happens it, that the emotions of forrow in tragedy afford gratification to the mind? It feems to be the confliction of our nature, that all the focial paffiors should be attended with pleafure. Hence nothing is more pleating, than love and friendfhip. Pity is for wife ends a fitrong infind; and it necefikrily produces fome differs on account of its fympathy with fufferers. The heart is at the fame moment warmed by kindnefs, and afflicide by diffreds. Upon the whole the flate of the mind is agreeable. We are pleafed with ourfelves, not only for our benevolence, but for our fentibility. The pain of fympathy is allo diminified by recollecting that the diffrefs is not real; and by the power of action and fentiment, ef language and poetry.

After treating of the acts of a play it is proper to notice the feenes. The entrance of a new perfon upon the flage forms, what is called a new feene. These

278

feenes, or fuccefive convertations, fhould be clofely connected; and much of the art of dramatic compodtion confifts in maintaining this connexion. For this purpofe two rules mult be obferred. 1. During the courfe of one act the flage fhould never be left empty a moment, for this would make a gap in the repreferation. Whenever the flage is evacuated, the act is clofed. This rule is generally obferved by French tragedians; but it is much negledted by the Englith. 2. No perfon flould come upon the flage, or leave it, without forme apparent reafon. If this rule be neglected, the dramatis perfona are little better, than fo many puppets; for the drama profeffes imitation of real transfitions.

To unity of action critics have added the unities of time and place. Unity of place requires the fcene never to be fhifted ; that the action of the play continue in the fame place, where it began. Unity of time, firidly taken, requires that the time of the action be no longer, than the time, allowed for the reprefentation of the play. Ariftothe however permits the action to comprehend a whole day. Thefe rules are intended to bring the imitation nearcr to reality.

Among the Greeks there was no division of ads. In modern times the pradice has prevailed of fufpending the fpedhaele forme little time between the ads. This pradice gives latitude to the imagination, and renders firtic confinement to time and place lefs needs

279

firy. Upon this account therefore too firid an obfervance of thefe unities flouid not be preferred to higher beauties of execution, not to the introduction of more pathetic fituations. But transgreffions of these unities, though they may be often advantageous, ought not to be too frequent, nor violent. Hurrying the forectart from one diffant eity to another, or making feveral days or weeks pafs during the reprefentation, would flock the imagination too much, and therefore eamot be allowed in a dramatic writer.

Having examined dramatic action, we thall now attend to the characters, moß proper to be exhibited in a tragedy. Several critics affirm that the nature of tragedy requires the principal perfonages to be always of high or princely rank; as the fufferings of fich perfons feize the heart the moß forcibly. But this is more fpecious, than folid. For the diffreffes of Defdemona, Monimia, and Belvidera, intereft us as much, as if they had been princeffes or queens. / It is fufficient, that in tragedy there be nothing degrading or mean in the perfonages exhibited. Fligh rank may render the fpeciaele more fplendid. Sub it is the tale itfelf, and the art of the poet, that make it intereffing and pathetic. /

In deferibing his characters the poet fhould be careful fo to order the incidents, which relate to them, as to imprefs the fpectators with favorable ideas of virtue, and of the Divine administration. Pity fhould be raifed for the virtuous in diffrefs; and the author fhould

ftudioully beware of making fuch representations of life, as would render virtue an object of aversion.

Unmixed characters, eicher of good or ill men, are not in the opinion of Ariklote fror tragedy. For the diffrefies of the former, as unmerited, hurr us; and the fufferings of the latter excite no compafilon. / Mixed characters afford the best field for difplaying, without injury to morals, the vicifitudes of life. } They intereft us the mold deeply; and their diffrefies are molt infrudive, when reprefented, as fpringing out of their own pafilons, or as originating in forme weakness, incidant to human nature.

The Greek tragedies are often founded on mere deftiny and inevitable misfortunes. Modern tragedy aims at a higher object, and takes a wider range ; as it flows the direful effects of ambition, jealoufy, love, refentment, and of every ftrong emotion. But /of all the paffions, which furnish matter for tragedy, love has most occupied the modern stage. ) To the antient theatre love was almost unknown. This proceeded from the national manners of the Greeks, which encouraged a greater feparation of the fexes, than takes place in modern times; and did not admit female actors upon the antient ftage ; a circumftance, which operated againft the introduction of love ftories. No folid reafon however can be affigned for this predominancy of love ) upon the ftage. Indeed it not only limits the natural extent of tragedy, but degrades its majefty. / Mixing

it with the great and folemn revolutions of human fortune tends to give tragedy the air of gallantry and juvenile entertainment. Without any affiftance from love the drama is capable of producing its higheft effects upon the mind.

Befide the arrangement of his fubjecf, and the conduct of his perfonges, the tragic poet mult attend to the propriety of his fentiments. Thefe mult be fuiled to the characters of the perfons, to whom they are attributed, and to the futuations, in which they are placed. It is chiefly in the pathetic parts, that the difficulty and importance of this rule are greateft. We go to a tragedy, expleting to be moved; and, if the poet cannot reach the heart, he has no tragic merit; and we return cold and dirappointed from the performance.

To paint and to excite paffion flrongly are prerogatives of genáss. They require not only ardent fenfibility, but the power of entering deeply into charadters, It is here, that candidates for the drama are lead fuccefsful. A man under the agitation of paffion makes known his feelings in the glowing language of fenfibility. He does not coolly deferibe, what his feelings are; yet this fort of fecondary deferibin tragte poets often give us inflead of the primary and native language of paffion. Thus in Addifon's Cato, when Lucia confifts to Portus her love for him, but fwears that fhe will never marry him ; Portus inflead of giv282

ing way to the language of grief and altonishment only defcribes his feelings;

Fix'd in aftonifilment, I gaze upon thee, Like one just blafted by a firoke from heaven, Who pants for breath, and fliffens yet alive In dreadful looks; a monument of wrath.

This might have proceeded from a byflander, or an indifferent perfon; but it is altogether improper in the mouth of Portius. Similar to this deforipive language are the unnatural and forced thoughts, which tragic poets fometimes employ, to eraggerate the feelings of perfons, whom they wilk to paint, as ftrongly moved. Thus, when Jane Shore on meeting her hufband in diftrefs, and finding that he had forgiven her, calls on the rains to give her their drops, and to the fprings to lend. her their freams, that fite may have a condunt fupply of tents; we fee plainly that it is not Jane Shore, that fpeaks; but the poet himfelf, who is ftraining his fancy, and fpurning up his genius, to fay fomething uncommonly frong and lively.

The language of real pation is always plain and fimple. It abounds indeed in figures, that express a diffurbed and impetuous flate of mind; but never emloys any for parade and embellifhment. Thoughts, fuggefled by pation, are natural and obvious; and not the offspring of refinement, fublity, and wit. Paffion neither reafons, fipculates, nor declaims; its language is thort, broken, and interrupted. The French tragedians deal too much in refinement and declamation. The Greek tragedians adhere moft to nature, and are moft pathetic. This too is the great excellency of Shakefpeare. He exhibits the true language of nature and paffion.

Moral featiments and reflections ought not to recur very frequently in tragedy. When unfeafonably erowded, they lofe their effect, and convey an air of pedantry. When introduced with propriety, they give dignity to the composition. Cardinal Wolfey's folloquy on his fall is a fine inflance of the falicity, with which they may be employed. Much of the merit of Additon's Cato depends on that moral turn of thought, which diffinguilles it.

The flyle and verification of tragedy fhould be free, eafly, and varied. Englifh blank verfe is happly fuited, to this fpecies of compolition. / It has fufficient majefly, and can defcend to the fimple and familiar; it admits a happy variety of cadence, and is free from the comfiraint and monotony of rhyme. Of the French tragedies it is a great misfortune, that they are always in thyme. For it fetters the freedom of the tragic dialogue, fills it with a languid monotony, and is fatal to the power of pafilon.

With regard to those fplendid comparisons in rhyme, and those ftrings of couplets, with which it was some time ago fashionable to conclude the acts of a tragedy,

284

and fometimes the most interesting feenes, they are now laid afide, and regarded not only, as childish ornaments,, but as perfect barbarisms.

# GREEK TRAGEDY.

HE plot of Greek tragedy was exceedingly fimple ; the incidents few ; and the conduct very exact with regard to the unities of action, time, and place. Machinery, or the intervention of gods, was employed ; and, what was very faulty, the final unravelling was formetimes made to turn upon it. Love, one or two infrances excepted, was never admitted into Greek tragedy. A vein of morality and religion always runs through it; but they employed lefs, than the moderns, the combat of the paffions. Their plots were all taken from the antient traditionary flories of their own nation.

Æchylus, the father of Greek tragedy, eshbits both the beauties and defeds of an early original writer. He is bold, nervous, and animated ; but very obfeure, and difficult to be underflood. His flyle is highly metaphorical, and often harfh and turnid. He abounds in martial ideas and deferiptions, has much fire and elevation, and little tendernefs. He alfo delights in thê mar vellous.

The most masterly of the Greek tragedians is Sophocles. He is the most correct in the conduct of his

#### GREEK TRAGEDY.

fubjects ; the mode just and fublime in his featiments. In deforiptive talents he is allo eminent. Euripides is accounted more tender, than Sophoeles; he is fuller of moral featiments; but he is lefs corred in the conduct of his plays. His expositions of his fubjects are lefs artful; and the fongs of his chorus, though very poetic, are lefs connected with the principal action, than those of Sophoeles. Both of them however have high morit, as tragic poets. Their flyle is elegant and beautiful; and their featiments for the most part juft. They fpeak with the voice of nature; and in the midth of fimplicity they are touching and interelling.

Theatrical reprefentation on the flages of Greece and Rome was in many reflects very fingular, and widely different from that of modern times. The fongs of the chorus were accompanied by infirumental mulic; and the dialogue part had a modulation of its own, and might be fet to notes. It has also been thought, that on the Roman flage the pronouncing and gefliculating parts were fometimes divided, and performed by different adors. The adors in tragedy wore a long robe ; they were railed upon cothurni, and played in makes. Thefe marks were painted; and the ador by turning the different profiles exhibited different emotions to the auditors. This contrivance however was attended by many diiadvantages.

### FRENCH TRAGEDY.

In the compositions of fome French dramatic writers tragedy has appeared with great luftre; particularly Corneille, Racine, and Voltaire. They have improved upon the antients by introducing more incidents, a greater variety of pallions, and a fuller difplay of characters. Like the autients, they excel in regularity of conduct; and their dtyle is poetical and elegant. But to an English tafte they want firength and pallion, and are too declamatory and refined. They feem afraid of being too tragic; and it was the opinion of Voltaire, that to the perfection of tragedy it is neceflary to unite the vohemence and adion of the English thratre with the corrections and decorum of the French.

Corneille, the faither of French tragedy, is diffinguithed by majefty of fentiment and a fruitful imagination. His genius was rich, but more turned to the epic, than the tragic vein. He is magnificent and fplendid rather, than touching and tender. He is full of declamation, impetuous, and extravagant.

In tragedy Racine is superior to Curneille. He wants indeed the copioufness of Corneille's but he is free from his bombaß, and casels him greatly in teudernefs. The beauty of his language and verification is uncommon; and he has managed his rhymes with fuperior advantage.

#### ENGLISH TRAGEDY.

Voltaire is not infarior to his predeceffors in the drama; and in one article he has outdone them, the delieate and interefing fituations, he has introduced. Here his his chief ftrength. Like his predeceffors, however, he is fometimes deficient in force, and fometimes too declamatory. His charafters, notwithflanding, are drawn with fpirit, his events are firking, and his fentiments elevated.

# ENGLISH TRAGEDY.

I.T has often been remarked of tragedy in Great Britain, that it is more ardent, than that of France, but more irregular and incorrect. It has therefore excelled in the foul of tragedy. For the pathetic mult be allowcd to be the chief excellence of the tragic mule.

The first object on the English theatre is the great Shake/parte. In extent and force of genius, both for tragedy and comedy, he is untrivalled. But at the fame time it is genius facoting wild, deficient in tafle, not always chafle, and unaffided by art and knowledge. Criticifm has been exhausted in commentaries upon him ; yet to this day it is undecided, whether his beantips or defects be greateft. In his writings there are admirable feenes and pafages without number; but there is not one of his plays, which can be presonanced

a good one. Befide extreme irregularities in conduct, and grotefque mixtures of the ferious and comic, we are frequently diffurbed by unnatural thoughts, harth expressions, and a certain obscure bombaft, and play upon words. Thefe faults are however compendated by two of the greatefl excellencies, a tragic poet can policifs, his lively and diverified painting of character, and his ftrong and natural expressions of patient. On thefe two virtues his merit refts. In the midth of his absurdities he interefts and moves us; fo great is his fkill in human nature, and fo lively his reprefentations of it.

He poficifies allo the merit of having created for himfelf a world of preternatural beings. His witches, golds, fairles, and fpirits of all kinds, are fo awful, myherious, and peculiar, as ftrongly to affect the imagination. His two mafterpieces are his Othello and Macbeth. With regard to his hittorical plays they are neither tragedies, nor comedies; but a peculiar fpecies of dramatic entertainment, in which he deferibes the characters, events, and manners of the times, of which he treats.

Since Shakefpeare there are few English dramatic writers, whole whole works are entitled to high praife. 'There are feveral tragedies however of confiderable merit. Lee's 'Theodofius has warmth and tendemels, though romantic in the plan, and extravagant in the fentiments. Otway is great in his Orphan and Venice

TRAGEDY.

Preferved. Perhaps however he is too tragic in thefe pieces. He had genius and ftrong paffions, but was very indelicate.

The tragedies of Rowe abound in morality and in elevated featiments. His poetry is good, and his language pure and elegant. He is, notwithfanding, too cold and uninterefing; and flowery rather, than tragic. His beil dramas are Jane Shore and the Fair Prenitent, which excel in the tender and pathetic.

Dr. Young's Revenge difcovers genius and fire ; but wants tendernefs, and turns too much on the direful paflions. In the Mourning Bride of Congreve there are fine fituations and much good poetry. The tragedies of Thomion are too full of a fliff morality, which renders them dull and formal. His Tancred and Sigifmunda is his malterpiece ; and for the plot, characters, and fentiments, juftly delerves a place among the beft English tragedies.

A Greek tragedy is a fimple relation of an interefling incident. A French tragedy is a feries of artful and refined convertations. An English tragedy is a combat of ßrong paflions, fet before us in all their violence, producing deep disfuters, and filling the fpedators with grief. Antient tragedies are more natural and imple; modern more artful and complex.

# COMEDY.

HE ftrain and spirit of comedy diferiminate it fufficiently from tragedy. While pity, terror, and the other flrong paffions form the province of the latter; the fole inftrument of the former is ridicule. Follies and vices, and whatever in the human character is improper, or exposes to centure and ridicule, are objects of comedy. As a fatirical exhibition of the improprietics and follies of men, it is ufeful and moral. It is commendable by this species of composition to correct and to polifh the manners of men. Many vices are more fuccefsfully exploded by ridicule, than by ferious arguments. It is poffible however to employ ridicule interoperly; and by its operation to do mifchief inflead of good. For ridicule is far from being a proper telt of truth. Licentious writers therefore of the comic clafs have often caft ridicule on objects and characters. which did not deferve it. But this is not the fault of comedy, but of the turn and genius of certain writers. In the hands of loofe men comedy will miflead and corrupt ; but in those of virtuous writers it is not only a gay and innocent, but a laudable and ufeful entertainment. English comedy however is frequently a School of vice.

The rules of dramatic action, that were preferibed for tragedy, belong allo to comedy. A comic writer mult observe the unities of action, time, and place. He mult attend to nature and probability. The imi-

# COMEDY.

tation of manners ought to be even more exact in comedy, than in tragedy; for the fubjects of comedy are more familiar and better known.

The fubjects of tragedy are confined to no age, nor country ; but it is otherwile in comedy. For the decorums of behaviour, and the nice differiminations of character, which are the fubjects of comedy, change with time and country ; and are never fo well underflood by foreigners, as by natives. We weep for the herces of Greece and Rome ; but we are touched by the ridicule of fuch manners and characters only, as we fee and know. The feene therefore of comedy fhould always be laid in the author's own country and age. The comic poet eatches the manners living, as they rife.

It is true indeed, that Plautus and Terenco did not follow this rule. The fcene of their comedies is laid in Greece, and they adopted the Greek laws and cuftoms. But it is to be remembered, that comedy was in their age a new entertainment in Rome, and that they were contented with the praife of translating Menander and other comic witters of Greece. In poficrior times the Romans had the "Comedia Togata," or what was founded on their own manners, as well, as the "Comedia Palliata," which was taken from the Greeks.

There are two kinds of comedy, that of character, and that of intrigue. In the last the plot or action of the play is the principal object. In the first the dis-

play of a peculiar character is the chief point; and to this the aftion is fubordinate. The French abound moch in comedies of character. Such are the capital pieces of Moliere. The English have inclined more to comedies of intrigue. Such are the plays of Congreve; and in general there is more flory, action, and buffle in English, than in French comedy.

The perfection of comedy is to be found in a proper mixture of thefe two kinds. Mere convertation without an intereffing flory is infinid. There should ever be for much intrigue, as to excite both fears and withes. The incidents should be striking, and afford a proper field for the exhibition of character. The piece however should not be overcharged with intrigue; for this would be to convert a comedy into a novel.

With refpect to charaders it is a common error of comic writers, to carry them much beyond real life; indeed it is very difficult to hit the precife point, where wit ends, and buffoonery begins. The comedian may exaggerate ; but good fenfe muft teach him, where to ftop.

In comedy there ought to be a clear diffindion in characters. The contraft of characters however by pairs, and by oppofites, is too theatrical and affeded. It is the perfection of art to conceal art. A mafterly writer gives us his characters, diffinguithed rather by fuch fhades of diverfity, as are commonly found in fociety, than marked by fuch oppofitions, as are follow

Brought into actual contraft in any of the circumflances of life.

The flyle of comedy ought to be pure, lively, and elegant, generally imitating the tone of polite converfation, and never defeending into groß exprefions. Rhyme is not fuitable to comic composition; for what has poetry to do with the conversation of men in common life? The current of the dialogue should be easy without pertnels, and genteel without flippancy. The without pertnels, and genteel without flippancy.

# ANTIENT COMEDY.

THE antient comedy was an avowed fatire againft particular perfons, brought upon the flage by name; Such are the plays of Ariflophanes; and compositions of fo fingular a nature illultrate well the turbulent and licentious flate of Athens. The most illuftrious perfonagets, generals and magiftrates, were then made the flubjects of comedy. Vivaeity, fatire, and buffoonery are the characterilities of Ariflophanes. On many occafions he difplays genius and force; but his performances give us no high idea-of the atit tatle for wit in his age. His ridicule is extravagant; his wit farcical; his perfonal raillery cruel and biting; and his obfenity intolerable.

Soon after the age of Ariftophanes the liberty of attacking perfons by name on the flage was prohibited

Bb 2

294

by law. The middle comedy then took its rife. Living perfons were fill attacked, but under föltidous names. Of thefe pieces we have no remains. They were fucceeded by the new comedy ; when it became, as it is now, the bufinefs of the flage to exhibit manners and characters, but not thofe of particular perfons. The author of this kind, molt celebrated among the Greeks, was Menander ; but his writings are perifiled.

Of the new comedy of the antients the only remains are the plays of Plautus and Terence. The firft is eminent for the *via comica*, and for an exprefilve phrafeology. He bears however many marks of the rudenefs of the dramatic art in his time. He has too much low wit and feurrility; and is by far too quaint and full of conceit. He has more variety and more force, than Terence; and his characters are flrongly marked, though fometimes coariely.

Terence is polified, delicate, and elegant. His flyle is a model of the molt pure and graceful latinity. His dialogue is always correct and decent; and his relations have a picturefque and beautiful fimplicity. His morality is in general unexceptionable; his futuations are interefling; and many of his fentiments touch the heart. He may be confidered, as the founder of ferious comedy. In forightlinefs and drength he is deficient. There is a fumeneis in his characters and plots ; and he is fuil to have been inferior to Menander, whom he copied. To form a perfect comic author, the fpirit and fire of Plautus ought to be united with the grace and correctueds of Ternec.

# SPANISH COMEDY.

HE most prominent object in modern comedy is the Spanish theatre. The chief commedians of Spain are Lopez de Vega, Guillen and Calderon. The firft, who is the most famous of them, wrote above a thoufand plays; and was infinitely more irregular, than Shakefpeare. He totally difregarded the three unities. and every effablished rule of dramatic writing. One play often includes many years, and even the whole life of a man. The fcene, during the first act, is in Spain; the next in Italy; and the third in Africa. His plays are chiefly historical; and are a mixture of heroic fpeeches, ferious incidents, war and flaughter, ridicule and buffoonery. He jumbles together chriftianity and paganism, virtues and vices, angels and gods. Notwithstanding his faults, he possefied genius, and great force of imagination. Many of his characters are well painted; many of his fituations are happy ; and from the fource of his rich invention dramatic writers of other nations have, frequently drawn their materials. He was confeious himfelf of his extreme irregularities, and apologized for them from the prevailing tafte of his countrymen.

### FRENCH COMEDY.

HE comic theatre of France is allowed to be correct, chafte, and decent. The comic author, in

296

whom the French glory most, is Moliere. In the judgment of French critics he has nearly reached the fummit of perfection in his art. Nor is this the decision of mere partiality. Moliere is the fatirift only of vice and folly. His characters were peculiar to his own times; and in general his ridicule was justly directed. His comic powers were great; and his pleafantry is always innocent. His Milanthrope and Tartuffe are in verse, and conflitute a kind of dignified comedy, in which vice is exposed in the fivle of elegant and polite fatire. In his profe comedies there is a profusion of ridicule : but the poet never gives alarm to modefly. nor cafts contempt on virtue. With these high qualities however confiderable defects are mingled. In unravelling his plots he is unhappy; as this is frequently brought on with too little preparation, and in an improbable manner. In his verse comedies he is not always fufficiently interefting ; and he is too full of long speeches. In his rifible pieces in profe he is too farcical. But upon the whole it may be affirmed, that few writers ever attained fo perfectly the true end of comedy. His Tartuffe and Avare are his two capital productions.

### ENGLISH COMEDY.

**F** R O M the English theatre is naturally expected a greater variety of original characters in comedy, and bolder fixekes of wit and humor, than from any other

### ENGLISH COMEDY.

modern flage. Humor is in fome degree peculiar to England. The freedom of the government and the unreftrained liberty of English manners are favorable to humor and fingularity of character. In France the influence of a defpotic court fpreads uniformity over the nation. Hence comedy has a more amplified and a freer vein in Britain, than in France. But it is to be regretted, that the comic spirit of Britain is often difgraced by indecency and licentioufinefs.

The first age however of English comedy was not infeded by this fpirit. The plays of Shake/peare and Ben Johnion have no immoral tendency. The comedies of the former difplay a ftrong, creative genius; but are irregular in condud. They are fingularly rich in charackers and manners; but often defected to plated the mob. Johnfon is more regular, but ftiff and pedantic; though not void of dramatic genius. Much fancy and invention, and many fine pailages, are found in the plays of Beaumont and Fletcher. But in general they abound in romantic incidents, unnatural characters, and coarie allufons.

Change of manners has rendered the comedies of the laft age obfolete. For it is the exhibition of prevailing modes and charafters, that gives a charm to comedy. Thus Plautus was antiquated to the Romans in the days of Auguflus. But to the honor of Shakefpeare his Falltaff is fill admired, and his Merry Wives of Winfor read with pleafure.

After the refloration of Charles II, the licentioufnefs, which polluted the court and nation, feized upon comedy. The rake became the predominant charafter. Ridicule was thrown upon chaftity and fobriety. At the end of the play indeed the rake becomes a fober man, and exhibits a picture of the pleafurable enjoyments of life. This fpirit of comedy had the word effact on youth of both faxes, and continued to the days of George II.

In the connedies of Dryden there are many flrokes of genius; but he is hafly and carelefs. As his object was to pleafe, he followed the current of the times, and gave way to indelicacy and licentioufneds. His indeeency was at times fo groß, as to occafion a prohibition of his plays on the flage.

After Dryden flourished Cibber, Vanburgh, Farqular, and Congreve. Cibber has fprightlinefs and a pert viracity is but his incidents are fo forced and unnatural, that his performances have all funk into obfeurity, excepting The Carelés Hutband and The Provoked Hufband. Of theft the fird is remarkable for the eafly politenefs of the dialogue ; and it is tolerably moralin its conduct. The latter, in which Cibber was affildad by Vanburgh, is perhaps the beft comed in the English language ; and even to this it may be objected, that it has a double plot. Its characters however are natural, and it abounds with fine painting and happy fireks of humor.

#### ENGLISH COMEDY.

Wit, fpirit, and eafe characterize Sir John Vanburgh; but he is the most indelicate and immoral of all our comedians. Congreve undoubtedly poffeffed genius. He is witty and fparkling, and full of character and action. Indeed he overflows with wit ; for it is often introduced unfeafonably; and in general there is too much of it for well bred conversation. Farguhar is a light and gay writer ; lefs correct and lefs brilliant, than Congreve ; but he has more eafe, and much of the Vis Comica. Like Congreve he is licentious; and modefty must turn from them both with abhorrence. The French boaft with juffice of the fuperior decency of their flage, and fpeak of the English theatre with aftonifament. Their philosophical writers afcribe the profigate manners of London to the indelicacy and corruption of English comedy.

Of late years a fendble reformation has taken place in English comedy. Our writers of comedy now app-ar athamed of the indecency of their predeceffors. They may be inferior to Farquhar and Cougreve in spirit, eaße, and wit; but they have the merit of being far more innocent and moral.

To the French flage we are much indebted for this reformation.<sup>3</sup> The introduction within a few years of a graver comedy in France, called the (froms or tender comedy, has attracted the attention and approbation of our writers. Galety and ridicule are not excluded from this (pecies of comedy; but it hys the chief Arefs on tender and interofling fluctions. It is fortimently and touches the heart. It pleafes not fo much by the laughter, it excites, as by the tears of affection and joy, which it draws forth.

This form of comedy was oppofed in France, as an unjulifiable innovation. It was objected by critics, that it was not founded on langhter and ridicule. But it is not neceffary, that all comedies be formed on one precife model. Some may be gay; fome ferious; and fome may partake of both qualities. Serious and tender comedy has no right to exclude gaiety and ridicule from the fage. There are materials for both; and the flage is richer for the innovation. In general it may be confidered, as a mark of increating politenefs and refinement, when thofe theattrical exhibitions become fallionable, which are free from indelicate featiment and an immoral tendency.

FINIS.











